HUSBY

A MATERIAL ROLL

to the second of the second of the

TRACE CONTRACTOR STATE

All larges of the control of the con

TARREST OFF WARREST

MACCELANCE

NOT THE PARTY OF THE REAL PROPERTY.

CONTRACTOR OF THE PROPERTY OF

W DW

VOL 1

American

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY

Containing an ACCOUNT of the

SOIL, CLIMATE

PRODUCTION and AGRICULTURE.

OFTHE

CONIES

BRITISHE

NORTH-AMERICA and the WEST-INDIE

HTIW

Observations on the Advantages and Disadvantages of settling in them, compared with GREAT BRITAIN and IRELAND.

BY AN AMERICAN.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. L

LONDON, ... Printed for J. B.E.W., in Pater-nother-France

Containing an ACCOUNT of the

SOIL, CLIMATE,

PRODUCTION and AGRICULTURE,

OFTHE

BRITISH COLONIES

IN

NORTH-AMERICA and the WEST-INDIES:

WITH

Observations on the Advantages and Disadvantages of settling in them, compared with GREAT BRITAIN and IRELAND.

BY AN AMERICAN.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON,
Printed for J. BEW, in Pater-noster-Row.

AMBRICAN. HUSBANDRY

Containing on ACCOUNT's the

SOLL, CLIMATE,

SHTIO

PRITISH COLONIES

W 1

NORTH-AMERICA and the WESTIMBIES,



BY AN AMERICAN

IN TWO VOLUMES.

Primed for J. 13 E.W. in Proceedingson.

den known to be fix feet deep

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.

hattitants are that up to their houses, and, except in the towns, lead a minerable life;

the greatest it was a standard to be determined to the delicer of the same to the delicer of the same to the same

the minter, and brandy and rom are then

NOVA SCOTIA.

Soil and climate of Nova Scotia—Agriculture—Fishing — Lumber — State of the Settlers—Islands of Cape Breton and St. John—Observations,

Scotia by the latitude would lead any person into the most egregious mistakes. Between 44 and 50 degrees of latitude in Europe we find some of the finest and most pleasant countries in this quarter of the world; but in Nova Scotia the case is very different. The winter lasts seven months, and is of a severity that is dreadful to new comers, the deepest rivers are frozen over in one night, so as to bear loaded waggons; the snow lies in some places ten feet deep, and upon level tracts it has Vol. I.

been known to be fix feet deep: the inhabitants are shut up in their houses, and, except in the towns, lead a miserable life; are almost in as torpid and lifeless state as the vegetables of the country; much of the fummer is spent in laying in fuel for the winter, and brandy and rum are then the greatest luxuries the people indulge in. Such a degree of cold as is then felt benumbs the very faculties of the mind, and is nearly destructive of all industry. When this fevere winter goes, at once comes a fummer (for they have no fpring) of a heat greater than is ever felt in England. The fnow is presently melted, and runs in torrents to the sea; the ground is thawed, the trees are presently in leaf, and the little husbandry here practifed is then begun. But what is almost as bad as the extremes of heat and cold, are the perpetual fogs, which render the country equally unwholfome and unpleasant; and, what is peculiarly provoking to the inhabitants, laft far into summer. Such is the climate; it is bad almost in excess; but we are not to imagine that it banishes husbandry, which might be the first conclusion of such as were unused to northern latitudes.

The

The foil varies greatly: in many parts it is thin and gravelly on a bed of rock; for many years this was what they endeavoured to cultivate, but ill success taught the inhabitants a change which has proved very advantageous. They fixed in the falt marshes on the bay of Fundy, which, although they required a very expensive drainage, yet, from the fertility of the foil, repaid the farmer much better than other tracts gained with much less difficulty. The foil in these marshes is a white or blue clay. mellow when in culture and marly; if the water is well conveyed off, it is capable of producing great crops, being fuitable to the heat of the summer. But the expence of getting this land is not small; the sea is to be dyked out, those dykes are to be kept in repair, and the temporary flashes conveyed off. Further, only the line next the coast is of value, as that only has the benefit of harbours for boats and schooners, and for carrying off lumber for the West Indies. Most of the advantageous tracts were patented feveral years ago; but the lotts change hands often, and at prefent many of them are to be fold cheap enough, ·though-under culture.

An idea of their management may be gained from the following particulars: upon the fettlers first going they fix upon a piece of marsh, with an adjoining one of wood-land, feldom less in the whole than from five hundred to eight hundred or a thousand acres: if the marsh is already banked, they pay an annual tax for that work; if not, they must execute it before any profit can be made. They build the house on the edge of the wood-land; a work that costs nothing in materials from the plenty of wood, which is fine, confifting generally of oak, pine, or black birch : but all the trees are grubbed, which makes the labour heavy.

Three years are nominally given to fettle the tracts affigned; but this is not strictly adhered to, but extended by favour to fix or seven. After ten years a quitrent is paid to the king of two shillings for every fifty acres; also a covenant entered into of planting two acres with hemp of every fifty taken up: the planters are kept to this article, but with very little effect, for the climate is utterly improper for that

production.

The marsh land is fine, and wants little more after draining but to fet the pough

to work for fowing wheat: it is all covered with a short but thick and spongy moss, which they plough in, and on one ploughing harrow in their wheat. This work they perform as foon as the weather breaks, and the frow is all gone; they do it in a very clumfy manner, attending not the least to their lands being laid neat and regular. In September the corn is ripe: they usually mow it, and the crops they get, notwithstanding the soil being good, scarce ever amount to middling ones in England. I have been affured, that two quarters of bad wheat in quality, are a great crop. They have hardly any idea of fallowing, but in the succeeding year plough up the stubble for another wheatcrop, which they continue as long as the land will yield it, and then leave it to recover itself, sometimes, however, changing for beans. The wood-lands, when cleared. they plant with peafe, potatoes, cabbages, &c. the latter production is very useful to them, they keep under the fnow in winter very found.

As to inclosures, they have only a ring fence, and one or two near the house; not always that; sometimes none but what parts their marsh land from the woods.

B 3

Cattle,

Cattle, in summer, are turned into undrained marshes and the woods, and in

winter are three parts starved.

That I may give as clear an idea of this management in all its relations as I can, I shall insert the expences of settling the plantation of Reeves's on the bay of Fundy, as is was put into my hands by a gentleman on whom I can depend.

The Sand to ser smeath	1.	s.	d.
Freight, &c. of five persons			
from England,	105		0
Patents, fees, &c. for nine			
hundred acres,	37	. 8	6
Dyking,	172	0	0
Building the house, barns,	h, sea	dgo	alq
boat-houses, &cc +			
Stock of the farm,	70	0	0
Grubbing two hundred and		11 10	700
thirty acres of wood-land,		an out	for
at 25s +	287	5	0
Seed, and putting in the crop,	52	0	0
A schooner, seventy tons, at	andi	(£13	od)
40s	140	0,	0
A shallop,	26	8	0
fine interference in a state of 5			
tradit tod onen commende ;		11	6
skow of mon bust there	I	Broug	ht

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 7
.b J. is shock in he regrected, the other are
Brought forward, 957 11 6
A whale boat, 10 10 0
Netts, lines, twine, and fun-
dries, 98 15 0
Seamen's wages for a feafon, 27 8 6
Bread, seventy hundred, at 153. 52 10 0
Pork, three barrels, at 50s. 7 10 0
Beef, fix bartels, at 40s 12 0 0
Arms and amunition, 26 0 0
Furniture and fundries, - 156 0 0
arearid, to man of rear shit sight totted
ad behaviored ten servicabe #348 15 . P
with Bilds the Constitution to couch bet-
The annual produce after a few years
diese anti-stand adolescient extens decided built.
Six hundred quintals of cod fish, at 14s 420 0 0 Mackarel and shads, sixty- seven barrels, at 20s. 67 0 0
Six hundred quintals of cod
inh, at 14s.
Mackarel and thads, lixty-
leven barrels, at 20s.
Jamaica nin, twenty-two
Jamaica fish, twenty-two quintals, 9s 9 18 0 Refuse ditto, eighteen quintals,
Kerule ditto, eignteen quintais
grand in the country, and the report in
Ship timber and lumber, - 03 0 0
been allowed and not upon but anthonis
to stand mentional veroviews to 565 15 10
mented consistent processions and supplied with
17/57/1 B4 It

It is much to be regretted, that the annual expenditure was not known; but if the high price of labour is confideredthe wages of the fishermen—the repairs of the vetfels-nets-implements-ammunition-wines-rum-tea-fugar, and other luxuries, &c. all these articles would certainly make a confiderable deduction from this annual product. As to the products of the land, they are more than confumed at home. Can any unprejudiced person suppose that the sum of thirteeen hundred pounds might not be expended on waste lands in Great Britain to much better advantage? I will not fo far anticipate the subject as to calculate here, but most affuredly we may determine that, in point of profit, such a sum might be more beneficially expended in British husbandry, than in that of Nova Scotia.

I say, in point of prosit, as to that of pleasure, there are other circumstances to be considered, which are material; these particularly concern the great plenty of game in the country, and the general freedom of all sporting and fishing. It has been asserted, and not upon bad authority, that a boy of twelve or sourteen years of age, with his gun, would maintain ten or twelve

These particulars, indeed, indicate, not only pleasure, but also a confiderable degree of profit; for a country, which will admit of fuch circumstances, must yield no trifling advantages in housekeeping : and however infignificant fuch a point my feein in a general account of a country, yet is it of importance in the eyes of those who quit their own to settle in America. In Britain, the game laws are fo firich that unqualified perfons must give up all thoughts of the pleasure of shooting and fishing, as well as the advantage in feeding their families, or be liable to severe and infamous penalties; and that this monstrous contrast sends no trifling number of people to the colonies I have not a doubt. or beilg

In the preceding accounts the reader finds that the whole product of the new plan-

plantation (and that a confiderable one) confifts in fish and lumber. It is remarkable, that without the fiftery the inhabitants of this colony would starve; their husbandry is infusficient to feed them; a circumstance strongly characteristic of the merit of Nova Scotia as a colony. In this respect the farmers somewhat resemble the inhabitants of Devonshire, Dorsetshire, and Cornwal, before the northern colonies almost beat the mother country out of her thare of the fishery; a very great portion of the English Newfoundland fishery was carried on by little farmers on the abovementioned coasts, who went out as soon as their spring seed was over, and returned before harvest: but in Nova Scotia it is the principal dependance of the people for their sublistence; and the only fale by which they can supply themselves with manufactures and other necessaries.

West Indies, but of this the whole province does not send out more than sells for five thousand pounds, and sometimes not so much. A part of the winter season is applied to cutting and sawing trees, but from the severity of the season the progress made in this work is inconsiderable, and yields yields no great profit to the farmer. The distance of those islands, with the vast superiority of the more fouthern colonies in climate for the winter execution of this work, leffen the profit of the Nova Scotians greatly. las-sur bossen out most susqu'

Neither the fishery nor the export of lumber prove advantageous enough to render the fetlers comparable in ease and wealth to the people of New-England, New-York, &c. or, I may add (and this is what I mean particularly to inculcate) to the same class of men among our farmers in Britain; except in the articles, not immaterial I allow, of shooting and fishing : but when the difference of climate is confidered; the agreeable and healthy life which is lead even in winter in England; the friendly fociety enjoyed by our lowest classes of farmers in our country towns and village alchouses, upon market days and other meetings - the goodness of our roads, and the security of living, what can tempt any that feel fuch advantages to leave them in pursuit of imaginary happiness in the woods of Nova Scotia? Where the winters are miserably severe, where society is scarcely any where to be found-without a road in the country, and where a hof-Relative tile

tile race of Indians, till very lately, rendered the whole colony unhappily infecure. But the great superiority remains to be mentioned: promotion, if I may so express myself, is cheaper in England; for it apears from the preceding calculation, that a much larger fum is necessary to go to, and fettle, with any advantage in Nova Scotia, even on the smallest scale, than would be sufficient to stock a good farm in England. The fishing apparatus is expenfive; and if that employment is neglected, the most profitable branch in the country is lost: the planters must degenerate into mere tartars, without a commodity for fale wherewith to buy manufactures. Let these circumstances be considered, and I think it must be apparent, that many of the emigrants who go to Nova Scotia with a view to practife a husbandry, &c. more profitable than that of Europe, must find themselves miserably deceived.

What fort of a country must it be where government is forced to give a bounty on raising corn to keep the people from starving? Yet this is the case with Nova Scotia. On, all wheat raised it is one shilling a bushel; on barley, oats, and pulse, nine pence, and on roots six pence.

Relative

Relative to the islands of Cape Breton and St. John I must observe, that the former has only a few plantations, made by connivance, by fishermen, merely for the convenience of its lituation for the cod fishery. But the island of St. John was granted to some well-known noblemen, fince the peace, with a view to colonize the whole: the scheme was originally formed by the late Earl of Egmont; but he did not live to fee any fuccess attend the plan, which yet was laid as well as most could be for such climates, and the execution begun with great spirit, at an expence that would have brought into culture no inconsiderable tract of waste in England or in Scotland; and that the fuccess would have been greater and infinitely more beneficial at home than in America, cannot for a moment be doubted. Several hundred of settlers have been fixed there, yet they are at present supplied with food from New-York: instead of a beneficial system of pasturage and planting hemp, they have already, like all these northern colonists, taken to the fishery, as the only means of paying for the necessaries of life, in direct contradiction to the designs of their patrons. This is, and ever will be, the confequence

fequence of colonizing in such northern latitudes, where agriculture must ever be carried on with seebleness; where the climate is to the last degree rigorous; and where every spot is inhospitable and frigid. To plant colonies in such situations, is acting contrary to every rational idea of colonization.

I am sensible that the original idea of planting Nova Scotia was not fo much upon a plan of agriculture as defence. The encroachments of the French made fettlements and fortreffes necessary; and the neighbourhood of Louisburg rendered a fafe port, as a retreat for the navy, indifpensable: upon this plan garrisons were necessary: and these could not be supported without an adjacent agriculture. . There is fomething rational in this, but it extends no further than the necessity of the case, and not to the immense expence which the nation has fuffered on account of the colony, amounting to confiderably more than a million sterling; besides, this argument, fince the peace, has no longer any validity, whereas we have acted as if it continued in full force; and after feeling the unprofitable expence of one snowy defart, have planted a second. This conduct would

would have been excusable had we posfessed no other territories in America, but while such immense districts remained uncultivated to the south, it was really inexcusable upon every principle of good policy.

sure of the forest part see for the en-

A M. A. M. A. Sandardardar and a suma and a suma and a suma formation of the district of the suma and a suma formation of the suma formation of the sumation o

aller a stored whereas a serie of the control

His best enting worth, area than a strong and

many feeting air walkings eathwild the care ow

nertherm pass of Canada obout Conlens on as to the fourbief sign the mighbout read of Montreals it is the increased.

CHAP.

-no reals C. H. A. P. II. days slider

Nould have been exoulable had we pol-

C A N A D C A A B LOUR STREET

Soil and Climate of Canada—Agriculture—
Inhabitants—River St. Laurence—Nature of the Country not yet settled—Exports—Importance of this acquisition—
Observations.—

MANADA is much colder in the winter than Nova Scotia, which may be accounted for by the distance from the fea; yet is the climate greatly preferable: the air is clear and pure, and the inhabitants in general enjoy as good health as any set of people in all America. That the climate is better we may likewise gather from the productions; pumpions and melons, apples and pears, are cultivated in common; whereas in Nova Scotia, though we cannot fay the country is absolutely without them, yet is the vegetation weak in comparison. In this I speak of the northern part of Canada about Quebec; for as to the fouth of it, in the neighbourhood of Montreal, it is far more mild, as appears by feveral plants commonly found there and to the fouth, which will not live at Quebec.

The north-west wind blows, through winter, with a feverity that is scarcely credible: it plainly comes through all walls that are not very thick; a candle is blown out when held against a wall that is only a brick and a half thick: all the infide of fuch walls are covered with fnow blown through, on the fide against the northwest; and the walls must be of a vast thickness, at the same time that the house is well heltered by wood and hill, for people within not to feel the wind blow on them. This dreadful north-west is felt throughout the continent, even to Charles Town, in South Carolina; and it has been absolutely afferted that it has blown over the whole Atlantic ocean, and been felt in Europe. It is this wind which renders the climate of all North America fo peculiar that no other is fimilar to it. Hence arises the severe frosts felt there in fuch fouthern latitudes, that the like is never known in Europe. Sharp frosts are sometimes felt in Florida, in latitude 30, which is that of Egypt and Morocco. This is owing to the north-west winds. Vol. I. They

They acquire their extreme coldness from the immense extent of snowy continent over which they blow, possibly from the North pole, whereas the continent of Europe and Asia ends in latitude 75, an open sea being to the north. This has been well explained by a late writer, from whom, candour demands I should acknowledge, that I borrowed the hint *.

This wind in Canada is more severe than in Nova Scotia, the snows are also as deep and as universal, but the air is clear, being free from the fogs which render the latter country so extremely disagreeable. The winter is not, however, absolutely without employment; wrapt up well in surs, winter expeditions are undertaken, and sawing and cutting lumber go on, though not with near such alacrity and effect as in the more southern colonies, where the workmen are employed as regularly in that season as in summer.

The foil in Canada is of two forts, the stoney, and the pure loam, or mould without stones; both are cultivated, but the latter is much the best; it is black or

^{*} Dr. Mitchel's Present State of Great Britain and North America.

reddish, and is certainly as fine land as any in the world; and were it in a more favourable climate would yield as rich productions. There are vast tracts of it in Canada which would, in many parts of England, let at twenty-five shillings an acre, but here are uncultivated; all the fettlements and farms in this country being only on the banks of the rivers, principally on that of St. Lawrence; the cultivated country is only a narrow flip on each fide the river, scarcely any where half a mile broad, unless it spreads on account of other streams that fall into the principal one. In some places, however, the cultivated country is fome miles broad, particularly near the three towns.

Respecting the vegetable productions of this colony there are found almost all the useful plants that are cultivated in Scotland, and many that succeed better in England than in Scotland. The common crops are wheat, barley, rye, and oats; feveral forts of peas and beans; many forts of roots, particularly carrots, parfnips, and potatoes, but the latter not in plenty, from the French not much affecting them. Many of the farms have an orchard, though not fo commonly as in the old English colonies to the

C 2

the fouthward: apples, pears, and plumbs fucceed well; but peaches they get with difficulty, nor are they of a good flavour: mulberries will not grow here. Walnut trees, carried from France, dye every year to the root, but shoot out again in the spring.

Their husbandry is very bad; the system is taking a crop and what they call a fallow, that is, they take a crop of wheat and after it leave the land at rest for a year, not for ploughing, but that the weeds may grow and be eaten off by the cattle: this method can arise from nothing but the plenty of land, for furely common fense might tell them, that a field, answering the purpose of a meadow, by the quantity of weeds on it, must be a strange preparation for corn. If they left it for ten or twelve years, till the graffes came so thick as to choak the weeds, it might, when ploughed up, become at once good corn land, as we find in many places is the cafe in England. In general they let the lands rest only one year, but some who have more land than the rest, leave it sometimes for two, three, or four years, before they fow it again: white clover, by that time, comes in great plenty.

No crop gets more than one ploughing, which is in April, after the frost breaks; then all their forts of corn are fown, wheat as well as the rest, consequently they have only a spring wheat: however, a few farmers have of late years got into the way of fowing the same grain in autumn; they do not thereby get an earlier harvest, but the grain is weightier and better, and the crop more abundant. As foon as the weather breaks, all the ploughs in Canada are at work to get in the corn, waiting very rarely, and but on fmall spaces of land, for carrying on the manure; and on one ploughing, which is performed with oxen or horses indiscriminately, they sow all forts of grain and pulse. Their crops are as good as moderate ones in England; from four to fix or feven septiers per arpent are commonly gained of wheat, that is, about two or two quarters and a half per English acre: oats yield very large crops, they fow them for their horses and other cattle; barley is a poor crop with them; and peas a very uncertain one, but fometimes they get a fine product of them. Ham all arolline book a at stac

Every farmer has annually a small piece of flax, but it is only for the use of his family:

family: they have none that is good, whether owing to their management of it, or the climate, I know not. They have also a piece of tobacco in every farm, for the family: all smoak it here.

They have in all parts of Canada very fine meadows of natural grass, of a fine fort *, with great plenty of white clover; not low marshy spots, but high upland meadows, the soil dry, sound loam; these are great advantages to the farmers; they yield fine crops of good hay which is mown in August.

The country inhabitants of Canada are all little farmers; very few of them having large farms, at least if we give that term only to the land they usually keep in any culture. Villages are rarely met with, and the few there are consist only of here and there a mechanic, or a schoolmaster: they are a chearful, hospitable people, and have behaved themselves with much good sense and politeness to the English that have settled amongst them since the conquest. At Quebec and Montreal they are remarkably gay and social, which indeed is the case in a good measure in most countries

i where I

that are so cold as to confine the inhabitants to their houses for a long winter; without a focial disposition, such winters would be insupportable. They are further a very happy people; yet their enjoyments are by no means numerous, and the whole country lies under two evils which almost entirely prevent encrease; the want of communication in winter with the rest of the world; and the want of money for circulation. This affects the whole colony equally, and makes their share of chearfulness an absolute necessary of life.

Was it not for the river St. Lawrence the whole country would be fo destitute of communication, as to be next to uninhabitable: but that noble river, which is navigable for the largest ships to Quebec, and every where deep enough for all the inland navigation of Canada, quite to the falls of Niagara, is the great chanel of communication between the different parts of the country. Indeed Canada is but a narrow flip of cultivated land along the banks of this river, which to fuch parts answers every purpose that can be wished, of travelling and the conveyance of merchandize, and the produce of the farms to the towns of Quebec, Montreal, and Trois Rivieres,

vieres, in each of which are regular markets. No slight part of the demand in those markets is formed by the troops, who both enliven and enrich the colony.

The unsettled country, which includes all but the banks of the river is a forest, generally filled with various forts of pines, oak, birch, &c. many of the trees are large. In parts of these forests the underwood is thick; in others, there is none at all. The foil in them has the same varieties as in the cultivated fields. tracts are excellent, and would, if cleared of wood, produce as good crops as any of the fields already in culture; but there are not inhabitants enough to extend the cultivation; and there are many reasons for this, which I shall mention by and by. I may observe that all that immense country to the fouth of the river St. Lawrence, which is part of New England and Nova Scotia, has very few tracts in it, by the report of the Indians, which are not capable of cultivation. It forms a square of three hundred miles every way, which is much larger than Great Britain; and confifts of forests on a good soil, or rich marshes. Cultivation would improve the climate, drive away the fogs, and make the country much

more

more inhabitable than at prefent. But fuch improvements must be some centuries off, and in the mean time the whole will remain, except on the coast and river, a mere inhospitable desart, like Nova Scotia. The fouthern parts of Canada, north of the great lakes about Niagara, &c. possess a climate infinitely superior to that tract, and also the line of country from Crown Point to the river St. Lawrence, equals any part of North America for fertility of foil, and agreeableness; at the same time that the climate is fo much superior to that even of Montreal, which I before observed was preferable to that of Quebec. Were it not for the country to the fouth of the lakes drawing away the people, these territories would foon be cultivated.

For the further information of the reader I shall transcribe the table of the annual exports from Canada since the peace of 1763.

Skins, L.	76,000
Whalebone and oil,	3,500
12000 quarters of wheat, at 20s.	12,000
Genfeng, fnake root, &c.	3,000
Timber and lumber,	11,000
and, yet is not Canada to be	105,500
eleened.	Which

Which export, with the import of manufactures, &c. employ thirty-four ships, and about four hundred feamen. But the wheat has for the last three or four years been at thirty-two shillings a quarter. As far as the skins can be gained, this colony will admit of increase, but the common idea is, that it has for some time arived at its zenith, as the game, &c. from which they are taken, rather declines than increases; the wheat and lumber are the furplus of the colony confumption, raifed by the hands which are fixed in their farms. and from habit, love of their native country, poverty, want of ability to move, or other motives, remain in it; but the export I do not apprehend is likely to increase, because new settlements are rare, but many families leave the country and move to the fouthward. This export is all the means which the whole body of the inhabitants have of purchasing manufactures, wines, spirits, India goods, and fugar, excepting alone the expenditure of the military and civil government, a part of which may be reckoned profit to the colony, and supposed to go for the same commodities.

But notwithstanding the small prospect of improvement, yet is not Canada to be esteemed

esteemed a slight acquisition to the British empire. Indeed it is, with the territories on the Ohio, a very important one; and which, with good management on our parts, might be made of much greater consequence even to the commercial interests of Britain, than the acquisition either of Guadalupe or Martinico, supposing there was a necessity of giving up both these islands, if Canada was retained; a suppofition which may be started, but which can never be believed. I have read many accounts of North America, in which the importance of this country has been pretty extensively considered, yet did I never meet with a just idea of the main strength of the argument. Dr. Mitchel feems to have understood it, but he wrote in so confused a manner, that it is difficult to gain his meaning.

The most important commercial interest of Great Britain is the supplying her colonies with manufactures, in exchange for their staple commodities. This trade, far the greatest that is carried on by England, depends on the colonies having room, not for common husbandry and farming, but for raising immense quantities of staples, lumber, &c. to enable them to pay

for the British manufactures; a fort of agriculture which we shall by and by find requires very different room from the hufbandry of Europe, being incompatible with a country that is fully, or even half peopled. -It further depends on this plenty of land being also great enough for every person without much difficulty to become a planter or farmer; for if fuch a difficulty arises, the overplus of population must betake itfelf to common labour, which at once eftablishes manufactures, for people will not starve, and if they cannot have employment in one thing they must in another; but, on the contrary, while land is very plentiful no manufactures (further than for private use, which should not go by that name) can be fixed, because labour must be immoderately dear, where every man may with so much ease become a little farne mon important commercial intana

Now what I would deduce from this circumstance is, that the French policy in hemming in our colonies to a narrow country along the sea coast by that well known chain of forts which they had built quite from Crown Point to New Orleans, was admirably calculated for the absolute deflerences, as colonies supplied

supplied by Britain with manufactures, for they cut off the increase of plantations so effectually by their forts and the incursions of their Indians, that some hundred thoufand people were, at the opening of the war, deprived of their agriculture, and would in a few years have all become manufacturers for fale, had not the evil been destroyed. And if a different event of the war had taken place to fecure them in their encroachments, that evil would have arisen to a magnitude that would have explained in a manner too striking to be doubted, how the possession of Canada might be of more importance than a fugar island; though one exported fix times more in value than the other.

It was said, I remember, that confining the French to their just bounds would have had the same effect. But this was weakly urged; for while they had Indians lest them, they would always have had it in their power to prevent that necessary extension of the agriculture of our settlements, upon which our whole interests in America depend. The Indians the French collected about Fort Duquesne, though near two hundred miles from our settlers, deprived us in fix months of near an hundred miles

miles of territory; for so far did our backsettlers quit their habitations upon the cruel
excursions of their enemies.

It is therefore plain, that they who rest the comparison of Canada against a fugar island, merely on the ballance of an account of exports and imports, much miftake the matter, fince they overlook therein the effential distinctions which form the real importance of this colony. But in the present case there is something further than mere extent and security; for the southern districts of Canada, those of the lakes, down to the Ohia, contain as valuable a territory as any possessed by us in America. The most fertile part of that continent, in a fine climate, and admirably adapted for the production of hemp and tobacco, commodities. I will venture to affert, is of more confequence to this nation than even fugar; and yet I am very far from derogating from the great and undoubted importance of fugar colonies to Great Britain.

set to termographic order of the set lust

is too trivial to trend on; but what con

growing, antwers the purpote of a fablic but I find the but I find venture to effect that even the

Defects in the Agriculture of Canada.

THE husbandry practised in this colony is in many respects so very defective, that I think it will not be an impropriety to point out the most material branches of their management, in which they act contrary not only to the common ideas of good farmers in England, but also to the dictates of the climate and other circumstances of the country.

First I shall remark that their system is essentially faulty. It is this,

1. Wheat or other grain.

2. Fallow, that is weeds for one, two, or three years.

There is no greater error in farming, whatever may be the country, than taking many successive crops of corn without the intervention of a fallow, or some crop which, from an extraordinary culture while

growing, answers the purpose of a fallow; but I shall venture to affert that even this fault is less than the management of the Canadians: the food gained by their cattle is too trivial to mention; but what condition of freedom from weeds can land be in, when the crop is fown only on one ploughing, and the land after that crop, left to run to weeds for a twelvemonth? Yet is this the management of these people.

Let me, instead of such mistaken conduct. recommend to them never to fail of ploughing the land they delign for corn in September; the succeeding frosts and snow will meliorate it much; if their plan is to leave it to weeds by way of a fallow after the corn, let them never fail of fowing plenty of white clover feed with the corn: the country in general runs naturally to it; it can never be supposed therefore to fail; but when the ground is left to feed itself, it is three, four, or five years, before a tolerable plant comes; in the management propose, they would have a rich meadow the first year.

Secondly. Instead of letting the land rest only one year, I would advise them to leave

leave it under clover three or four; during that, or even a longer time, it would constantly improve, until it gained a thick rich turf, after which the ploughing it up for corn would be attended with great advantage, at the same time that the meadow thus gained would pay the sarmer as well as the best in his sarm. Suppose the white clover left sour years, the system would then be

- 1. Corn.
- 2. Clover four years.
- 3. Corn.

But I should propose improvements in the corn years of the system. The Canada farmers are very inattentive to the change of their corn crops, making very little distinction between successive ones of wheat, barley, and oats, and pease and beans; whereas they ought most certainly, according to the principles of the best English husbandry, interchange them by following white corn with pulse, and that again with white corn.

Thirdly, I must remark, that our French husbandmen do not properly attend to the winter support of their cattle: the climate agrees very well with cabbages of two or three forts, turneps, carrots, kale, &c.

Vol. I. D plants

plants which are hardy enough to stand extremely well the field culture in that climate. These would be of very high advantage in the winter support of their cattle, and would, with the help of a greater quantity of hay (gained by means of clover on their fallows instead of weeds) enable them not only to increase their profit by these cattle, but at the same time answer a purpose equally beneficial in raising manure, a business in which their long winters might be of great efficacy. In this climate, where the foil is so chilled with intense frost, and drenched in fnow and rain, it must have a coldness in its nature much demanding that warmth which manure gives, and confequently no business would be more profitable than raising plenty of it. The population of the towns of Canada is insufficient to yield the famers much affiftance in this way; nor indeed would it be of much confequence were this otherwise, unless the countrymen had better ideas of the nature of their business, fince they do not carry away near so much from Quebec and Montreal as they might; for want of attention in them, no flight quantities are annually thrown into the river, which is utterly inexcusable considering their having water carriage to every farm almost in the colony.

Were the ideas of the farmers upon this object of keeping cattle, with a view to raising the more manure, of the nature they ought to be, the articles of winter food for cattle above-mentioned, fuch as cabbages, turneps, and other roots, would be introduced in the arable fields interchangeably with corn, in the manner turneps are in the fystems in England and Scotland: this would keep the lands in much better order than they are at present, besides being the means of raising manure and making a greater profit from the increase of cattle. Upon these principles the following system might be recommended to the farmers of this country.

- 1. Wheat.
- 2. Pease.
- 3. Oats.
- 4. Turneps.
- 5. Barley.
- 6. Cabbages.
- 7. Wheat.
- 8. White clover.
- q. White clover.
- 10. White clover.

D 2

This

This system for ten years would answer all the purposes of good husbandry—would keep the land clean from weeds—would raise great plenty of winter food for cattle and improve by their manure the products of corn.

Had I not extended this chapter to a length I did not expect, I should expatiate on other articles of their management, which I have reason to think not a little faulty, particularly in their methods of ploughing and laying their lands, which is done here in a manner more aukward and clumsy than can be conceived in England; also in the way they have of getting in their hay and corn harvest; but these and other particulars may be esteemed too infignificant for particular notice.

olomidWico olomidWicos

CHAP. IV.

The agriculture of Canada compared with that of Britain.

AM sensible that the number of emigrants that go from Great Britain and Ireland to Canada is not considerable, nor to be compared with those who every day go to our colonies to the fouthward, yet as some future advocates, even for the northern settlements may arise-and as a worse country than this, viz. the island of St. John, has lately been attempted to be fettled, I think it may prove of use to draw a comparison between the profit and advantages which may be expected from agriculture in Canada and in Britain, that all may, in future at least, know (if they will leave their native country) which are the parts of America that emigrants had better go to.

Much of the happiness, and many of the comforts of life among the farmers or planters of any country, depend on their raising a sufficiency of saleable products, not only to pay the expences of cultivation, but

 D_3

also to purchase such commodities as they cannot raise themselves: such for instance as many articles of cloathing, furniture, and food, not to speak of luxuries, which hardly deserve that name from the generality of the use. Some idea may be formed of the state of life in Canada from the exports being compared with the population. No lift of the inhabitants has been taken fince it came under the dominion of Britain; but I have reason to think them not decreased. We are told by a good writer that before the war they amounted to 100,000 *. I have already shewn that they export to the amount of 105,000 l. which may be called 20 s. a head for the people. Now this is the whole amount of the manufactures and commodities which they consume, further than what they grow and make at home; an amount in a country that has only one manufacture (of iron); which shews how slender those enjoyments of life must be which depend on foreign imports; and that fuch a dependance must be absolutely necesfary and effential, any one will fee who confiders the climate.

^{*} Account of the European Settlements in America, vol. II. pag. 30.

But we are further to remember that only about 23,000 l. of this export is in the products that can have any thing to do with the farmers, viz. the corn and the lumber: the skins and fors, to the amount of 76,000l. are almost all bought of the Indians for woollen goods, brandy, guns, and ammunition, confequently a great part of this fum goes to the Indians instead of the Canadians, a circumstance which will reduce the confumption of manufactures and foreign products in Canada to a fum far short of 20 s. a head, or even of 10 s. and will prove clearly enough that what we have here been calling the enjoyments of life dependant on importation, must be confined in a furprifing degree.

Examining the affair in this light points out the nature of the country and of its agriculture. Land is in plenty, and so cheap, that every man may have as much of it as he can stock or cultivate; but labour must be extravagantly dear, as it is in every country where land is granted to all that will have it. Wood is plentiful; and food of most forts that are produced by the country, such as sish and sowl, very cheap, and slesh not very dear. In this case we see at once the state of a farmer, or a new settler;

D 4

he has land, and wood to build him a house; and after he has stocked his farm with cattle, and implements, and feed, he has the product of it in corn and roots to feed himfelf and family; with fish and fowl for the trouble of taking; his flax, and his family's labour supply linen; and iron being the produce of the country, he may buy it with corn; some coarse woollens are also made, but the quantity is very trifling; there remains for him to purchase rum or brandy, feveral articles of cloathing, guns, ammunition, parts of houshold furniture, sugar, tea, wine, and India goods, if he confumes any; and in order to procure these he has no way to gain them but by his share of the export of wheat and lumber, that is 4s. or 5s. per head of his family, supposing the Indians carried off none of the import, but as they take off the most, the share of the farmers must be yet less.

It is very evident therefore that the life and enjoyments of a new settler in Canada must be strangely confined and wanting in what we should call the necessaries of life; but this objection is not of weight with those whose previous state of life was inferior, such as disbanded soldiers, servants, labourers, and some others, such may cer-

tainly

tainly make a shift to get fixed in a farm, and find in it most if not all the necessaries of their life: but even these must be such as are on the spot; for it would answer to none to go thither in order to gain this. When a man receives his discharge in a country where he can have land for nothing, it is his business to take it, for another colony being far more advantageous is nothing to him, who may not have money to move himself one hundred miles, instead of five hundred, which may be necessary for him to go.

That the comparison between the number of people, and the exported produce, is, in respect of Canada, a just rule to judge of the consumption of foreign products, &c. will appear from reflecting, that in this colony they have no other means of gaining them: a case which is different in our maritime ones, where a trade is carried on, and other means of bringing money into the country besides their mere agriculture.

The circumstance that must keep down this colony, and make it unprofitable to settle in, is the want of a short and regular navigation. At first sight it might be urged, that if 12000 quarters of wheat

are exported, more might also be, and then the farmer would find a sale for all he could raise: but the situation of the colony is such, that I should rather suppose those 12000 quarters, owing to an accidental more than any regular demand—or to the conveniency of loading ships with it going out with surs, &c. for the colonies to the southward on the coast enjoy a navigation so superior, and are so much nearer to market, that I should apprehend they would entirely undersell the Canadians.

Let it be considered as an universal rule. that agriculture can no where be a profitable employment-or one that will even vield all the necessaries of life, where the farmer has not a regular sale for every thing he raises; for if he possesses not this, he cannot with any advantage increase his cultivation, upon however small a scale it might have been before; nor can he without this scale command the money which is necessary for purchasing those things which his farm cannot produce. This is equally a fact, whether his product be wheat, tobacco, rice, or fugar. A regular market for all he raifes is the foul of the farmer.

This

This is the distinction that must ever be made; in those colonies that have a market for the farmer's productions, he may practice his business with profit. But in those that have it not, like Canada, he can only live; he cannot get money, nor can he, if he increases his culture, gain proportionably the comforts or agreeable-nesses of life.

From this state of the case, how can it ever be adviseable for any person employed in agriculture in Europe, to leave it for practifing the same art in Canada? Whoever has in England, or Scotland, money enough to pay their passage and expences to Quebec, to flock a farm, and go thro' the expenditure of the first year, small as it is, might certainly employ that money in farming at home to better advantage: fince in the latter case they are in the way of improvement, and may by industry increase their capital while they live comfortably; but in the former, they can gain only a certain point, which is living comfortably, but as to increase or improvement very little is to be looked for. Yet in this we do not exclude exceptions, which there will ever be in all cases; there are certainly men who make money in Canada—but a few

a few inftances are not what should, in fuch an enquiry, be attended to, but the general nature of the country, and the fi-

tuation of the greater number.

If money is to be expended on the paffage, stocking the farm, &c. in which works two or three hundred pounds would very foon be laid out, even for a small tract of land, in such case we may readily determine that the money might be laid out to far greater advantage in England, or in Scotland or Ireland: at the fame time that we deduce this, we must also allow that there is a case in which Canada may be preferable to England, though not comparable to feveral other colonies: if a family in Britain have an opportunity of getting a free passage to Quebec, which may happen from more accidents than one; and they have a small sum of money to buy a few cattle and implements, when they arrive there, in that case they will be able to get into a bufiness sufficient for their maintenance and support, which they could not be able to do in England. This is a case clearly in favour of Canada, but it is not one that can happen often.

CHAP. V.

NEW ENGLAND.

Climate of New England—Soil—Present state of the several counties of that province—Agriculture—Observations on the exports of New England.

HIS province lies between 41° and 45° north latitude, but like all the territories of America, it must not have an idea formed of its climate by a comparison with the European parallels: that latitude in the latter is the fouthern parts of France, and the northern ones of Spain, countries in which the climate is unexceptionable: but in New England the winter is much longer than it is here, and at the same time fevere beyond any thing we ever experience in the sharpest frosts: the summer in heat exceeds that of Spain, and it comes as it does in most parts of North America, without the intervention of a spring: but what is worfe, they fometimes experience, tho' not near fo often as farther to the fouth, fud-

fudden changes from hot to cold when the north-west wind blows; but in general the weather is pretty uniform; in both summer and winter the sky is clear and serene; and for months together exhibits a pure azure expanse, without a cloud, or speck to be feen. The climate has been vaftly improved fince the country has been cleared of wood and brought into cultivation. The cold in winter is less intense, the air in fummer purer, and the country in general much more wholesome. It is the climate of this province which entirely regulates its agriculture, and therefore should be well attended to, the great heat in fummer, and the severe frosts in winter, with the north-west winds which blow with fuch sharpness, these render the culture of common wheat not near fo advantageous as that of maize.

The soil of the province differs considerably, as may be supposed in a country of such great extent. The south and eastern parts are the most fertile, such as Massachusets Bay, Connecticut, Rhode Island, and the whole tract that borders on New York, quite to the Lake Champlain. In these territories are sound very considerable tracts of sine and rich land. It consists of a black

a black mold on a red loam or clay: of loams, some stoney, but not therefore unfertile; and parts of clay alone which is not their worst land. The have also very good sandy lands, which soil agrees best with

their capital production, maize.

New England being the oldest of our American colonies, the best parts of it may be supposed to be granted away or purchased, which is the case; but it is not thence to be apprehended that the greatest part of this large province is cultivated: in the fouthern divisions the country is well fettled, fo as for many miles together to have some resemblance of old England, but even in these there are very large tracts of forest left, which are private property, and confequently cannot now be patented. The richest parts remaining to be granted, are on the northern branches of the Connecticut river, towards Crown Point, where are great districts of fertile soil still unfettled. The north part of New Hampshire, the province of Main, and the territory of Sagadahock; have but few fettlements in them compared with the tracts yet unsettled; and they have the advantage of many excellent ports, long navigable rivers, with all the natural advantages that

are found in other parts of this province. I should further observe, that these tracts have, fince the peace, been fettling pretty fast: farms on the river Connecticut are every day extending beyond the old fort Dummer, for near thirty miles; and will in a few years reach to Kohaffer, which is near two hundred miles; not that such an extent will be one tenth settled, but the new comers do not fix near their neighbours, and go on regularly, but take spots that please them best, though twenty or thirty miles beyond any others. This to people of a fociable disposition in Europe would appear very strange, but the Americans do not regard the near neighbourhood of other farmers; twenty, or thirty miles by water they esteem no distance in matters of this fort; befides, in a country that promises well the intermediate space is not long in filling up. Between Connecticut river, and Lake Champlain, upon Otter Creek, and all along Lake Sacrament, and the rivers that fall into it, and the whole length of Wood Creek, are numerous fettlements made fince the peace, by the Acadians, Canadians, and others from different parts of New England. This whole neighbourhood is a beautiful country,

country, and possesses as rich a soil as most in New England. Let me also remark here, that the new settlers in these parts have cultivated common wheat with good success, so that they have more fields of it than of maize, which is not the case in the southern parts of New England; to what this difference is owing I have not been informed.

In the province of Main, particularly on the rivers which fall into the sea near Brunswic, there are many settlements made by Germans who have come over fince the war; they are in general in a thriving condition, as most of the settlers are in North America that are well fituated for an immediate communication with the fea; ships come very regularly to all the ports on this coast to take in loadings of corn, falted provisions, and lumber-for the West Indies; by which means the farmers (who also are engaged pretty deeply in the fishery on these coasts) have a ready opportunity of conveying all their furplus products to a regular market, the great thing wanted in Canada. But still these northern coasts of Main and Sagadahock, are under the fatal influence of that freezing climate, which is bad enough in the fouth VOL. I. parts

parts of New England, but here approaches to the severity of Nova Scotia, though not

fo much involved in fogs.

The particulars of the busbandry of this province are extremely worthy of attention, because it is as it were between the most northerly colonies, and the central ones, which are of an acknowledged merit in climate, &c. The crops commonly cultivated are, first maize, which is the grand product of the country, and upon which the inhabitants principally feed. It is not however to the exclusion of common wheat, which in a few districts is cultivated with fuccess. It would be useless to give a particular description of this plant, which is fo generally known. Its culture has fomething particular in it, and therefore should be mentioned more particularly. It is a very large branching plant, which requires a great share of nourishment, so as to be planted fingly at the distance of four or five feet square; it requires good land, and much dung, if plentiful crops would be gained; and the foil must be kept clean from weeds, by frequent hoeings, besides ploughing cross and cross between the plants: this is practifed only by good farmers, but it is pity it is not universal among

among all the cultivators of this plant, for none in the world pays better for good treatment, proportioned to the value of its produce. Had Mr. Tull, the inventor of the horse-hoeing husbandry, known it, or rather had he lived in a country where it was commonly cultivated, he would have exhibited it particularly as the plant of all others which was most formed for his method of culture: even common farmers in some parts of New England have been ftruck with the excellency of the practice of ploughing between the rows of this grain, that they have been presently brought to practife it in common, so that it is now no longer an unusual method. One peck of the feed is the common quantity for an acre of land; and the produce varies from twenty to forty bushels, but from twentyfive to thirty are very generally gained. The expences of this culture per acre have been thus stated.

a the chartery can practife	The I.	S.	d.
Seed,	- 0	0	6
Culture,	-954600	11	8
Harvesting, &c	- 0	3	6
Conveyance to market,	- 0	4	6
Sundries,	- 0	2	6
lightly of the enerate, for	mand aviston	2	8
E 2		And	

And the value, straw included, amounts to, from cos. to 41. sterling, per English acre, which is certainly very confiderable: but then their management in other refpects renders the culture not so cheap as it may appear at first fight, for the New England farmers practise pretty much the same fystem as their brethren in Canada; they have not a just idea of the importance of throwing their crops into a proper arrangement, so as one may be a preparation for another, and thereby fave the barren expence of a mere fallow. Maize is a very exhausting crop; scarce any thing exhausts the land more, and this to so great a degree, that their being obliged to depend on this for their food, renders them more than any other circumstance unable to raise hemp and flax in sufficient quantities for exportation, or even for rigging their own ships, and cloathing themselves with linen. Nor have they sufficient quantities of rich land upon which they can practife a management that would include both.

Besides maize, they raise small quantities of common wheat; but it does not produce so much as one would apprehend from the great richness of the soil: this is owing to the peculiarity of the climate, for we have lands in Europe that, to appearance, could bid fairer to produce large crops. But as I before observed, the new settlers in the north-east part of the province have found that wheat is to be raised with no contemptible success.

Barley and oats are very poor crops, yet do they cultivate both in all parts of New England: the crops are fuch as an English farmer, used to the husbandry of the eastern parts of the kingdom, would think not worth standing; this I attribute entirely to climate, for they have land equal to the greatest productions of those plants. Their common management of these three forts of grain, wheat, barley, and oats, is to fow them chiefly on land that has laid fallow for two or three years, that is, left undiffurbed for weeds and all forts of trumpery to grow; though at other times they fow oats or barley after maize, which they are enabled to do by the culture they give the latter plant while it is growing: all their corn here is in general fown in fpring, from the common idea that the climate will not admit of an autumnal fowing: but this is with exceptions; for of late years some of the more intelligent gentlemen farmers have, in various instances, E 3 broken

broken through the old methods, and fubstituted new ones in their room. These have, in various parts of the province, fubstituted the autumnal instead of the spring fowing, and with great advantage. In some parts of Connecticut and Rhode Ifland, they have introduced the English system of making clovers a preparation for corn; they leave the grass upon the land as many years as it will yield tolerable crops, and then plough it up, and fow wheat, which is found a much better management than the common one. The clover affords good crops of hay once a year, besides an advantageous eatage for their cattle, which is much better than leaving the land to cover itself with weeds.

Summer fallowing is in some parts of the province not an uncommon practice, but it is not executed so well as in England; they give this preparation to land that is pretty much exhausted, and which they design for maize or for hemp, which latter also requires the addition of much manuring. What they produce is good; though not equal to the Russian, or even to that of old England; but its requiring the very best rich lands in the province, and also dunging, prevents them raising even

even enough for their own use, as their numerous shipping demands large supplies of it. They have been urged by several counties, even to a large amount, to go largely into the culture of hemp, which would certainly be a very national object, since there is no staple that any colony could raise would be more advantageous to Great Britain, or save her the expenditure of larger sums of money.

Flax they raise with much better success, as it does not demand near so rich a soil as hemp; but the more southern colonies much exceed New England, even in this article, for what is there raised is not sufficient for the home consumption of this very populous colony, whereas more to the south they export considerable quantities of flax seed.

In the best cultivated parts of New England, turneps are introducing in the field culture, but not in the manner they ought to do. This is an article that demands their attention greatly, but as I shall be more particular on them when I speak of the defects of their husbandry, I shall not enlarge on it here.

Pease, beans, and tares, are sown va-

any where managed as they are in the well cultivated parts of the mother country. But every planter or farmer grows enough of the food for fattening hogs, for supplying his own family, and driving some sat ones to market. Hogs are throughout the province in great plenty, and very large, a considerable export from the province constantly goes on in barrelled pork, besides the vast demand there is for the sistery, and

the shipping in general.

Apples may be mentioned as an article of culture throughout New England, for there is no farmer, or even cottager, without a large orchard: some of them of such extent, that they make three or four hundred hogsheads of cydera man; besides exporting immense quantities of apples from all parts of the province. The orchards in New England are reckoned as profitable as any other part of the plantation. Among the other productions of this province, I should not forget the woods, which, in the parts not brought into culture, are very noble; they consist of oak, ash, elm, chefnut, cypress, cedar, beech, fir, ash, fassafras, and The oak is very good, and employed chiefly in ship building; and the fir yields very greatly for masts, yards, and plank,

plank, even the royal navy is supplied from hence with masts of an extraordinary size; and the export of lumber to the West-Indies is one of greatest articles in the province.

A large portion of every farm in New England, confifts of meadow and pasture land: wherein it much resembles the better parts of the mother country. In the low lands, the meadows are rich, yielding large quantities of hay, which, though apparently coarse, is yet much liked by all cattle; the common herbage of many of these is a grass which has made much poise in England under the name of Timothy grass. Two or three tons of hay an acre are not an uncommon produce in these meadows. The farmers find great advantage in keeping a large part of their farms for pasturage, as they are thereby enabled to support large herds of cattle, and flocks of sheep, which much improve their

The cattle commonly kept here are the fame as in Great Britain: cows, oxen, horses, sheep, and hogs; they have large dairies, which succeed quite as well as in Old England; oxen they fat to nearly as great a size; their mutton is good; and the wool which

which their sheep yield is long but coarse, but they manufacture it into coarse cloths, that are the common and only wear of the province, except the gentry, who purchase the fine cloths of Britain: no inconsiderable quantities of these coarse New England cloths are also exported to other colonies, to the lower people of whom, especially to the northward, they answer better than any we can send them. The horses are excellent, being the most hardy in the world; very great numbers are exported to the West-Indies and elsewhere.

It is proper to observe, that the unsettled parts of the province, which northwards extend almost from the coasts to the river St. Lawrence, are, with an exception, of fome open meadows and marshes, one continued and thick forest of the above-mentioned trees, but particularly of pines; and though such parts are not brought to that value and population as the rest, yet are they to be esteemed highly valuable, and a great treasure for future exportation, whenever the legislature shall in their wisdom give a bounty fufficient to enable the New Englanders to underfell the Baltic in the ports of Great Britain; an object of infinite importance, than which there is scarcely

delin

any in the economy of our colonies that demands more earnest endeavours. vast forest, which is in fize equal to that of the whole island of Great Britain, and extends into the greatest parts of Nova Scotia, belongs to the crown, but grants are made constantly to all such persons as apply for land, of fuch parts of it as they demand, under condition that they fettle it in a given time and proportion; also under a reserve of all timber fit for masts for the royal navy. If there is a navigation, and application is merely made for grants in any other parts, the rest of the timber is of no flight value to the new fettlers, as it yields a certain price, and is a commodity regularly experted from the province.

I shall conclude this account, with a table of the exports of this province fince the peacest

Cod-fish dried, 10,000 tons, at 101. f. 1	00,000
	27,500
Whale-bone, 28 tons, at 3001	8,400
Pickled mackrel and hads, 15,000 barrelsat 20s.	15,000
Mafts, boards, staves, shingles, &c	75,000
	49,000
Turpentine, tar, and pitch, 1500 barrels, at 8s.	600
Horses, and live stock,	37,000
	35,000
Pickled beef and pork, 19,000 barrels, at 30s.	28,500
Bees-wax, and fundries,	9,000
Lato Total Circulation, 100	85,000

Upon

Upon this table I must observe, that the fishery amounts to 250,000 l. of it; or rather more than half the total, which shews what a great proportion of the people of this colony are employed in it. The other half is the produce of their lands, for fo both ships and pot-ash must be esteemed. Cattle and beef, pork, &c. came to 65,5001. all the rest is timber, or what is made of timber; this is a proportion that gives us at once a tolerable idea of the colony. We are not from hence to suppose, that the great body of the landed interest in this country has, like Canada, no other resource to purchase foreign commodities with, than this small export. The case is very different, New England enjoys a vast fishery, and a great trade, which brings in no flight portion of wealth. The most confiderable commercial town in all America is in this province; and another circumstance is the increase of population. These causes operate so as to keep up a considerable circulation within the colony. Boston and the shipping are a market which enriches the country interest far more than the above mentioned export, which, for fo numerous a people, is very inconfiderable. By means of this internal circulation, the farmers

farmers and country gentlemen are enabled very amply to purchase whatever they want from abroad.

CHAP. VI.

State of the inhabitants—Country gentlemen—Farmers— New Settlers— Lower classes.

HERE is in many respects a great resemblance between New England and Great Britain. In the best cultivated parts of it, you would not in travelling through the country, know, from its apance, that you were from home. The face of the country has in general a cultivated, inclosed, and chearful prospect; the farmhouses are well and substantially built, and stand thick; gentlemen's houses appear every where, and have an air of a wealthy and contented people. Poor, strolling, and ragged beggars are scarcely ever to be feen; all the inhabitants of the country appear to be well fed, cloathed, and lodged, nor is any where a greater degree of independency, and liberty to be met with:

nor is that diffinction of the ranks and classes to be found which we see in Britain, but which is infinitely more apparent in France and other arbitrary countries.

The most ancient settled parts of the province, which are Rhode Island, Connecticut, and the southern part of New Hampshire, contain many considerable land estates, upon which the owners live much in the style of country gentlemen in England. They all cultivate a part of their estates; and if they are small, the whole: this they do by means of their stewards, who are here generally called overseers: the rest is let to tenants, who occupy their same by lease, in the same manner as it is in the mother country; the rents paid for such farms being the principal part of the landlords income.

Here therefore we see a sketch of one class of people, that has a minute resemblance to the gentlemen in England who live upon their own estates, but they have in some respects a great superiority: they have more liberty in many instances, and are quite exempt from the overbearing influence of any neighbouring nobleman, which in England is very mischievous to many gentlemen of small fortunes. Fur-

ther, they pay what may be almost called no taxes; for the increase of people and farms is fo great, that the public burthens are constantly dividing; besides their being in all inflances remarkably low. This is an advantage to be found no where but in America, for all the rest of the world groans under the oppressive weight which bad governments and absolute monarchs have laid on mankind. They have also the advantage of living in a country where their property is constantly on the increase of value. Trade, navigation, fisheries, increafing population, with other causes, have operated strongly to raise the value of all the estates under cultivation, whose situation is favourable, for in proportion as the wild country is taken up good lands and convenient fituations rife in value; till we fee they come, near the great towns, to as high a value as in the best parts of Great Britain, for near Boston there are lands worth twenty shillings an acre. Another circumstance, in which the estates of the gentlemen in New England have a great advantage, is that of being exempted from the payment of tythes, and rates for the support of the poor, which in Britain make a vast deduction from the product of an catha maker that to lettle : cor, unon the

estate. The plenty of timber, and the cheapness of iron, and all materials for building, are also advantages to all country estates of a most valuable nature; in England this article, which is what goes under the general name of repairs, swallows up a large portion of rent, and with those already mentioned, and land-tax, leaves him, out of a large nominal rental, but a small neat income.

With these advantages, the New England gentlemen are enabled to live upon their estates in a genteel, hospitable, and agreeable manner; for the plenty of the necessaries of life makes housekeeping remarkably cheap, and counter-balances the fmall rents they get for fuch parts of their estates as they let. This circumstance is owing to the ease of every man setting up for a farmer himself on the unsettled lands: this makes a scarcity of tenants; for those who have money enough to stock a farm, have enough to fettle a tract of waste land, which is much more flattering than being the tenant of another: one would suppose that such a circumstance would prevent their being a tenant in the country; but this is not the case, low rents and accidents fometimes induce them to live rather than to fettle: nor, upon the whole,

land, there are more estates that are under the management of over-seers than that are

let to tenants.

Upon the whole, we may determine that the country gentlemen of New England are in many respects very fortunately situated, and as well stationed in all respects for living comfortably and at their eafe, as any fet of people can be: and this circumstance does not extend merely to the points which I have now mentioned, but to another which deserves attention: it is the growth of timber and increased value of forest land: in New-England, any gentlemen may have a grant of whatever land he pleases upon complying with the common terms of fettlement, which are the grant of fifty acres for every white person fixed on the estate; this to a person in the country, is a condition fo eafily performed that they have it in their power to command almost what part of the ungranted land they please: this is an advantage unparalleled in any country of the world except our other colonies. By this means the gentlemen of New England have an opportunity of constantly encreafing their estates. Those of fortune erect saw mills on their new grants, by VOL. I. which

which means they are enabled to make a very considerable profit by the woods at the same time that they lay the soundation of suture estates for their posterity.

Some modern writers, very well informed in the affairs of our American colonies, have been particularly attentive to the circumstance of the mortgages which the merchants and others of London have on their estates. This wants an explanation: the country gentlemen of New England are as free from this as any men in the world: it concerns only those who have dealings with London, these are the to-bacco and rice planters; but as to the people of property in New England it is not the case with, I may say, any man in the province that is not engaged in trade.

The next class of the country inhabitants of which I am to describe is the farmers; but I must previously observe, that by farmers we are to understand not only the men who rent lands of others, but also the little freeholders who live upon their own property, and make much the most considerable part of the whole province. These are the posterity of former settlers, who having taken in tracts of waste land proportioned to their ability, have died

and left it to their descendants equally divided among all the children, by the gavelkind custom, which is prevalent throughout this province. These countrymen in general are a very happy people; they enjoy many of the necessaries of life upon their own farms, and what they do not fo gain, they have from the fale of their furplus products: it is remarkable to fee fuch numbers of these men in a state of great ease and content, poffeffing all the necessaries of life, but few of the luxuries of it: they make no distinction in their agriculture from the tenants of the gentlemen, only live more at their ease, and labour with less assiduity. I should observe that this set of men near resemble a similar class which we knew in England very generally, before our wealth grew fo confiderable as to destroy all moderation; the great, when grown wealthy as well as powerful have purchased all such little freeholds as joined their estates, and thereby exterminated one of the most useful fets of men that could be found in this or any kingdom, an event which the law of gavelkind fecures the New Englanders from.

These freeholders of small tracts of land which compose the greatest part of the pro-

vince, have, almost to a point, the necessaries of life and nothing more, speaking however according to our ideas of life in Europe. Their farms yield food-much of cloathing-most of the articles of building-with a furplus fufficient to buy fuch foreign luxuries as are necessary to make life pass comfortably: there is very little elegance among them, but more of necesfaries-a greater capability of hospitality, and decent living than is to be found among the few remains of their brethren in England: a class which taxes, tythes, rates, and repairs, with the increased expences of living, have almost driven from the face of the earth. It is not therefore difficult to draw a parallel between the little freeholders of Old and New England: in the former, a variety of causes have almost swept away the race; whereas in the latter they flourish as much as such a set of men can any where flourish. and it is will besend to

Before I take my leave of the two different ranks of landlords in New England, let me observe that there is a very material difference between the country gentlemen of this colony, and the mother country, in respect of that branch of luxury which induces men to leave their estates, in order

to founder the rents of them in a capital. Of late years there are few men in England who call themselves gentlemen, that do not at least pay an annual visit to London with their wives and families, and fpend as much in one month upon pleasure, as they do in the other eleven upon utility: In a word, the country gentry of small fortunes in England starve upon their estates, in order to make a figure at the Pantheon and Almack's; and if their rental is fomething above mediocrity, will not content themselves without a town house, in which to spend the better half of the year. This is a custom which wastes and destroys half the estates in the kingdom, and makes beggars of many families that might with prudent management live genteely and independently in the country.

To enter into a full account of the consequences of this branch of luxury, would
be unnecessary; suffice it here to observe,
that the gentlemen of New England are
almost intirely free from a profusion, which
could not but be fatal to their estates. It
is very rarely that any families from the
country make a winter residence at Boston
for the sake of the small degree of pleasure
which that capital affords. I know there

F 3

The new fettlers upon fixing themselves in their plantations enter at once into the class of these freeholders; but from poverty in the beginning of their undertakings fall naturally into a class below them, unless they begin with a considerable sum of money that raises them in the consideration of their neighbours. There are many of these who begin with fuch small possessions, that they are some years before they can gain the least exemption from a diligence and active industry that equals any of the farmers of Great Britain. Such men, although they may be in the road of gaining as comfortable a living as any of the old freeholders, vet rather fall into an inferiority to them; not from the manners or constitution of the colony, but from modesty and the natural exertions of a domestic industry.

Respecting the lower classes in New Englaud, there is scarcely any part of the world in which they are better off. The price of labour is very high, and they have with

this advantage another no less valuable, of being able to take up a tract of land whenever they are able to fettle it. In Britain a fervant or labourer may be master of thirty or forty pounds without having it in their power to lay it out in one useful or advantageous purpose; it must be a much larger fum to enable them to hire a farm, but in New England there is no such thing as a man procuring such a sum of money by his industry without his taking a farm and fettling upon it. The daily instances of this give an emulation to all the lower classes, and make them point their endeavours with peculiar industry to gain an end, which they all efteem fo particularly flattering.

This great ease of gaining a farm, renders the lower class of people very industrious; which, with the high price of labour, banishes every thing that has the least appearance of begging, or that wandering, destitute state of poverty, which we see so common in England. A traveller might pals half through the colony without finding, from the appearance of the people, that there was fuch a thing as a want of money among them. The condition of labourers in England is far from being comfortable, if compared with their American brethren. 201 E 4

brethren, for they may work with no flight diligence and industry, and yet, if their families are large, be able to lay up nothing against old age: indeed the poor laws are very destructive of any such provident conduct. Those laws have the effect of destroying prudence without giving an adequate recompense; the condition of the aged or diseased poor who depend on their support is in many cases lamentable; or at least much inferior to what their own previous industry would have procured them had they not been feduced by the idea of this worse than no dependence. And without extending our reflections to this part of their lives we may determine that the pay they receive for their work does not rife proportionably with the price of all their necessaries; the consequence of which is to them great oppression. On the contrary, the New England poor have no delufive poor laws to depend on: they aim at faving money enough to fix them into a fettlement; their industry rarely fails of its end, fo that the evening of an industrious life is universally that of a little planter in the midst of all necessaries. The public consequence of this may be easily deduced; it is a very high price of labour, and an amaz-

ing increase of people; since marriages must abound greatly in a country, where a family, instead of being a burden, is an advantage.

I have more than once mentioned the high price of labour: this article depends on the circumstance I have now named: where families are so far from being burthenfome, men marry very young, and where land is in fuch plenty, men very foon become farmers, however low they fet out in life. Where this is the case, it must at once be evident that the price of labour must be very dear; nothing but a high price will induce men to labour at all, and at the same time it presently puts a conclufion to it by so soon enabling them to take a piece of waste land. By day labourers, which are not common in the colonies, one shilling will do as much in England as half a crown in New England. This makes it necessary to depend principally on servants, and on labourers who article themselves to ferve three, five, or feven years, which is always the case with new comers who are in poverty.

SHOP OF MITTER HANDS IN THE STATE OF THE

·eflog

and in brook to a record as all offered an anados. CHAP. VII.

there engineer or nitrigation, to exceed grow,

Remarks on the errors in the rural management of New England.

HAPTERS of fuch a nature ought not to be esteemed impertinent in fuch a work as this, wherein I particularly mean to explain every thing in my power concerning the country management of America, from its being so little known in England. And it is of consequence to understand the defects of their agriculture, as well as the advantages of it, fince we are almost equally concerned in both.

The cultivated parts of New England are more regularly enclosed than Canada, but the planters do not sufficiently attend to this circumstance; many estates, and farms are in this respect in such condition, that in Great Britain they would be thought in a state of devastation; yet here it all arises from carelessness. Live hedges are common, yet the plenty of timber in many parts of the province is fuch, that they neglect planting these durable, useful, and excellent fences, for the more easy way of

posts

posts and rails, or boards, which last but a few years, and are always out of repair. This is a negligence, and a want of fore-sight that is unpardonable: but though the new settlers see the inconvenience of it on the lands of the old ones, and find live hedges in many places substituted, yet do they go on with the practice, as if it was the best in the world. In many plantations, there are only a few enclosures about the houses; and the rest lie like common fields in England, the consequence of which is much useless labour in guarding crops from cattle.

Respecting their system, a distinction is to be made between the parts which have been many years in culture, and which, from the neighbouring population, are grown valuable; in these the lands are much better managed than in the frontier parts of the province, where land is of little value, and where all the new settlers fix. In the former, the farmers lay down a system which they seem tolerably to adhere to, though with variations. They sow large quantities of maize, some wheat, barley, oats, buck-wheat, pease, and beans, turneps, and clover: hemp and star in small parcels. And these they throw after

Liney

one another, with variations, so as to keep the land, as well as their ideas permit, from being quite exhausted; which they effect by the intervention of a ploughed summer fallow sometimes. When the land has borne corn for several years, till it threatens to yield no more, then they sow clover among the last crop, and leave it as a meadow for some years to recover itself. But all this system proceeds too much on the plan of the worst farmers of Great Britain, to get corn from their fields as long as ever they will bear it.

Instead of such management, I shall venture to recommend the following sys-

- T. Summer fallow.
 - 2. Maize.
- 2. Peafe or beans.
- 4. Barley or oats.
- lo 5. Turneps. A de main was a sanda Riske
- 6. Wheat.
- 7. Clover for three, four, or five years.
 - 8. Wheat. Who was a value of the control of the

I think fuch a system is well adapted to their climate and soil. But I am sensible many objections will be made to it; particularly there being twice as much wheat as maize: in this point I am doubtful.

They

They fay they cannot grow good wheat; that they do not grow good wheat I am fenfible, but I attribute it to their throwing it into fuch fystems as this, a maize, 2 maize, 2 wheat, 4 oats, c wheat, &c. &c. In which case, the wheat may be thin. shrivelled, and husky, without its being the fault of the climate; Lam of opinion, under fuch culture, it would be the same in Britain. But if in this point I should be mistaken, let the fixth crop be changed for maize. In this fystem I confider maize, barley, oats, and wheat, as crops that exhaust the land; but pease, beans, turneps, and glover, as fuch as rather improve than exhaust it, provided they are cultivated in the manner they food for certle, they are extremely little of

Maize is reckoned a great exhauster in New England, and they have some reason for the idea, though I think they carry it too far. The culture is something similar to that of hops; being planted in squares of about five feet, and when up, the plant is earthed into little hillocks: they ought, during the whole growth, to proceed on the exact principles and practice of the Tullian culture, of horse-hoeing it inceffantly, and cutting up such weeds as grow about

about the plant, out of the reach of the horse-hoes; these are not many, as the plants standing in squares, the horse-hoes work both ways. The misfortnne is, they do not always keep the plantations of maize clean, or the earth so loose in the intervals as it ought to be, in which case one may casily conceive that the land may be left totally exhausted; but this effect would be vaftly leffened by being more affiduous in the culture, while the crop was growing -absolutely to deftroy all weeds, and keep the vacant spaces in garden order: points in which the New England farmers (some few excepted) are not by any means perther supprove that exhault its proceed

Turneps, and other articles of winter food for cattle, they are extremely inattentive to; the great want of the country, which almost prevents their planting hemp in quantities, is the want of dung, and yet they will not take the only method of gaining it, which is the keeping great stocks of cattle, not ranging through the woods, but confined to houses or warm yards. This can only be done by providing plenty of winter food: at present, they keep no more than their hay will feed, and some they let into the woods to provide for themselves,

selves, not a few of which perish by the feverity of the cold. Great stores of turneps, or other roots, and perhaps cabbages better ftill, would make their hav and fraw go much further, and by means of plenty of litter, for which this country is in many respects very well provided, they might raife fuch quantities of manure as would double the fertility of all their lands, and give them the command even of hemp in much greater quantities than it is now raised. A more general culture of the various forts of clovers, would also increase the means of keeping cattle, and confequently raising more dung, which is in all parts of the world, whatever may be the climate, the only means of getting good arable crops. Besides, turneps or other roots, cabbages, clover, &cc. in their growth, and the culture which fuch receive as stand fingle, much improve the land, as all good farmers in England have well known thefe hundred years. Nor have the New Englanders any reason to fear the having too much cattle for the constant export of beef, pork, and live flock of all kinds, to the West Indies, which is a market that will never fail them. let their quantity be almost what it may And

And this mention of cattle leads me to observe, that most of the farmers in this country are, in whatever concerns cattle, the most negligent ignorant set of men in the world. Nor do I know any country in which animals are worse treated. Horses are in general, even valuable ones, worked hard, and starved : they plough, cart, and ride them to death, at the fame time that they give very little heed to their food; after the hardest day's works, all the nourishment they are like to have is to be turned into a wood, where the shoots and weeds form the chief of the pasture; unless it be after the hay is in, when they get a share of the after-grass. A New Englander (and it is the samequite to Pensylvania) will ride his horse full speed twenty or thirty miles; tye him to a tree, while he does his business, then re-mount, and gallop back again. This bad treatment extends to draft oxen; to their cows, sheep, and fwine; only in a different manner, as may be supposed. There is scarce any branch of rural economy which more demands attention and judgment than the management of cattle; or one which, under a judicious treatment, is attended with more profit to the farmer in all countries; but the the New England farmers have in all this matter the worst notions imaginable.

I must, in the next place, take notice of their tillage, as being weakly and infufficiently given: worse ploughing is no where to be feen, yet the farmers get tolerable crops; this is owing, particularly in the new settlements, to the looseness and fertility of old woodlands, which, with very bad tillage, will yield excellent crops: a circumstance the rest of the province is too apt to be guided by, for feeing the effects, they are apt to suppose the same treatment will do on land long fince broken up, which is far enough from being the case. Thus, in most parts of the province, is found shallow and unlevel furrows. which rather scratch than turn the land; and of this bad tillage the farmers are very fparing, rarely giving two ploughings if they think the crop will do with one; the consequence of which is their products being feldom near fo great as they would be under a different management. Nor are their implements well made, or even well calculated for the work they are defigned to perform; of this among other instances I may take the plough. The beam is too long; the supporters ought to be moveable, VOL. I.

as they are in ploughs in England, and in Scotland; the plough share is too narrow, which is a common fault; and the wheels are much too low; were they higher, the draft would be proportionably lighter. In other parts of the province, I have indeed seen better ploughs, but they are in few hands, and, besides, are not quite free from these defects.

The harrows are also of a weak and poor construction; for I have more than once feen them with only wooden teeth, which however it may do for mere fand in tilth, must be very inefficacious on other soils, but the mischief of using such on one fort of land, is, that the flovens are always ready to extend them for cheapness to the The carts and waggons are also in fome parts of the province very aukward ill made things, in which the principles of mechanics are not at all confidered. There are however some gentlemen near Boston, who, having caught the tafte of agriculture, which has for some years been remarkable in England, have introduced from thence better tools of most forts, and at the same time a much better practice of husbandry; and if they took pains to fpread this about the province, it could not fail

fail of being attended with very beneficial effects. Societies for the encouragement of agriculture feem to be the only means of bringing it to bear, by means of premiums and bounties.

Another article, which I shall here mention, is that of timber, which already grows fo scarce upon the fouth coasts, that even fire-wood in some parts is not cheap; and is forced to be brought from Sagadahock: this has been owing to the planters upon their first settling, ravaging rather than cutting down the woods: and what is a striking instance of inattention to their real interest, is the new settlers going on in the same manner, although they cannot but see and know the effects of it in the parts first settled. They not only cut down timber to raise their buildings and fences, but in clearing the grounds for cultivation they destroy all that comes in their way, as if they had nothing to do but to get rid of it at all events, as fast as posfible. Instead of acting in so absurd a manner, which utterly destroys woods of trees, which require an hundred years to come to perfection, they ought in the first settling and cultivating their tracts of land, to inclose and reserve portions of the best woods for

G 2

for the future use of themselves, and the general good of the country; points which they have hitherto feemed to have very little at heart. Indeed, this violent and unlicensed destruction of timber, has been carried to a degree in our colonies, that calls for a preventive from the public: for it is clear to common sense, that if the legislature does not interfere in this point, the whole country will be deprived of timber, as fast as it is fettled; which ought not to be the case while any attention is given to the public interests. For nothing is of more importance to this country, though a colony, than timber: the plenty which has hitherto abounded, makes the planters fo regardless of their effential interests, as to think it a commodity of little or no value. Which must be attended with worse consequences than almost any part of the ill management, which they have hitherto been attended with.

Let me, before I quit this subject, obferve further, that the New Englanders are also deficient in introducing those new articles of culture, which have become common in different parts of Great Britain; among others, let us instance carrots, parsnips, potatoes, Jerusalem artichokes.

All To so well the law of so of life.

C H A P. VIII.

Comparison between the benefits resulting from agriculture in Great Britain and New England.

Have given in the preceding passages what I may venture to fay is a fair and candid account of New England. I may be in numerous passages mistaken, but I have not purposely given a better or worse account of things than the fact has really been; this observation is necessary, in order to prepare the reader for the comparifon which I am going to draw. The cafe is not indifferent; nor is it so strongly decifive in favour either of one or the other, as to make the argument depend upon a few strong outlines, that appear clear to the reader the instant they are produced, which is the case with Canada and Nova Scotia. On the contrary, New England very much refembles, in feveral effential circumstances, Great Britain. For instance, it is a country which produces all the neceffaries, but none of the luxuries of life, It is a country which depends as much or more

more upon navigation, commerce, and fisheries, than Britain does; agriculture not vielding those rich products which form the foundation in other countries of the most beneficial branches of commerce. Befides this, the face of the country in some particulars, the ranks of the people, the number of gentlemen living on their estates, the freedom of the lower classes, with various other circumstances, give an uncommon resemblance between Great Britain and New England, which may well make it a matter of difficulty to judge between them: to which if we add that both enjoy liberty, both civil and religious, we shall find that a cool, dispassionate, and candid examination is necessary, and by no means a hasty or incautious one.

The great points in favour of New England are the enjoyments of plenty of land—a freedom from heavy taxes,—from tythes,—from poor rates;—with an open market for all commodities raised. On the contrary, Great Britain lies under the disadvantage of having no land for new grants—is much burthened by taxes—and also by that of tythes—and poor rates: in this comparison the benefit is all on the side of New England; but in others there are

G 4

points

points much more favourable to the mother country: First, the climate is more favourable than that of New England to husbandry; for though the fruits of some kind in America are far beyond what we have in Britain, yet in the articles of farming produce this advantage extends to nothing of importance. Wheat is a crop far more valuable than maize, but cannot be gained in New England upon comparable terms with what it is in Britain; nor does maize produce nearly like it in quantity, nor any thing like in value. This superiority runs through all the products of a farm, and also in the price of them: which in a comparison of the two countries should never be forgotten. The exporting price of wheat, for three or four years after the peace of Paris, in the colonies was 20s. a quarter, while in England, it was from 44s. to sos. This principal grain regulates the rest in most parts of the world, as it does in both Britain and America; the case is the same with barley, oats, pease, beans, hay, butter, cheese, and every article the farmer carries to market. If the monstrous difference of these prices be confidered, it will furely be thought a counterballance to many other advantages. I am fensible.

fensible, that wheat in America, has of late years been at 26s. to 32s. a quarter; but then it has in England been from 50s. to 56s. so that the superiority has continued: we may safely suppose the same difference of price has run through other articles of corn; indeed we know it has, and also, that in all products which arise in whatever manner from grass lands, the superiority in the price of England is far greater; upon the whole, this difference may be reckoned at 50 per cent.

Now if a calculation is made of this superiority or even of 40 or 30 per cent. I am clear it will be found to more than ballance the difference of the farmers expences in rent, tythe, and rates; and also the advantages which the New Englanders have in plenty of timber and some other

articles of inferior importance.

But further, the American has in one instance an inferiority which is great and marked; it is the price and nature of the labour which he employs: he pays more than treble the rate of Great Britain, or else submits to be served in a manner which is open to an hundred inconveniencies. This is an article of such consequence as to ballance many others.

As far therefore as the comparison concerns the substantial farmers in either country, the renters in Britain, and the renters or owners in New England, that rank neither with the lower classes nor with the gentlemen, I think the advantage lies clearly in favour of the former; and no flight proof that this determination is just, is the difference of wealth between these two fetts of men; the farmers in Britain of the rank now under confideration are incomparable richer than the fimilar inhabitants of New England; among whom very few are to be found that can be called men of wealth or even property: they live in a decent comfortable manner, but rarely acquire wealth.

I do not apprehend the parallel turns out the same with the lower class of farmers, for I do not think a more miserable set of men are to be found than the little sarmers in Britain; they work harder, fare worse, and are in fact poorer than the day labourers they employ, whereas in New England, the little freeholders and sarmers live in the midst of a plenty of all the necessaries of life; they do not acquire wealth, but they have comforts in abundance: I freely acknowledge

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 91 knowledge the superiority of the colony in this article.

In that of the poor, and the labourers, the comparison is equally in favour of New England: in this respect common and almost universal experience tells us, that in all countries which have long been wealthy, in which a great commerce, flourishing manufactures, and established luxury are fixed, that in such countries the poor are always in a state of oppression and of mifery: It would be too much to fay that this must be fo, but the fact is, that it always is fo; and, we see in the case in question of Great Britain, that the poor in general are in a state of poverty; and it is necessary they should, or the trade and manufactures of the country would fink, for their prosperity depends on that low price of labour which keeps the labouring poor below the proportion of the high price of every thing elfe.

The last circumstance of this parallel is the country gentlemen of two, three, or to five hundred pounds a year land estate; and here I must observe that the comparison turns out utterly in favour of the colony. Indeed the high prices of every thing at home, owing to the plenty of money, has

almost

almost ruined such people, so that very few will foon be found; they must either starve. or convert their estates into money, and apply it in some line of industry to make more than common interest; they must become traders, or farmers if they do not fuffer themselves to be eclipsed by every country grocer, or woolman. But this is not the case in New England; there, four or five hundred pounds a year is a great estatenot that there is not much larger, but it is sufficient for all the comforts and conveniences of life, and for fuch a portion of the luxuries of it, as are indulged in by any neighbour, though their estates may be larger than his. In a word, his fituation is the very reverse of that of his brethren in Britain, insomuch that no change can be imagined more beneficial (in point of the expenditure of his income) than for such a country gentleman to fell his estate in England, and with the money of the fale to buy in New England; though we shall by and by come to colonies that are preferable. By such a conduct he leaves his country after making the only advantage in his power of the cheapness of money, by getting a great price for his land; and he goes immediately into another in which he finds flooris.

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 93
finds money dear; so that he profits doubly

by the change.

As to gentlemen whose fortunes are confiderable enough to support them in the enjoyments of the age, they of course will remain fixed, because they can get nothing by moving which they have not at home; with the circumstance of living in the midst of the luxury and elegance of the first country in the world—luxuries which they do not behold like their little neighbours, with envious eyes, but which they enjoy in common with the rich and great.

Upon the whole there are some classes, whose emigrating to New England need not surprize us, but there are others among

whom it happens very irrationally.

his boundaries more il ve asserbled of

A Revigains in the a State and the state was the state and the state and the state and the state and the state as the stat

has file oppositive a successful relative in feveral

C H A P. IX.

these transfer deared in which winder doubly

NEW YORK.

Climate of New York—Soil—Productions— Husbandry—Curious accounts of a new settlement—Present state of the inhabitants— Exports.—

HE colony of New York lies between latitude 41° and 44°, which tho' partly the fame parallel as New England, vet is it attended with a different climate in some respects; but in every circumstance superior, fince there are productions that will not thrive in New England, which do admirably here; not owing to the greater heat (for New England is as hot as New York) but to a better and more falubrious air. The spring in New York is earlier, and the autumn late; the fummer is long and warm; indeed fometimes the heat is great, but rarely oppressive; the winter is severe but short; it is not so sharp as in New England, and they have in general a clear bright sky. In winter the snow lies deep, and for two or three months; and they travel

New England, in the manner that is common in the northern parts of Europe.

Sometimes indeed the cold is extraordinary great; of which Dr. Mitchel gives an instance. By the observations, says he, made, in January 1765, by the masters of the college at New York, Fahrenheit's thermometer fell 6 degrees below 0, which is 21 degrees below 15, the greatest cold in England.—Water then froze instantly, and even strong liquors in a very short time.—And we are told it is not uncommon there to see a glass of water set upon the table, in a warm room freeze before you can drink it, &c.*

The foil of the province is in general very good; on the coast it is sandy but backwards, they have noble tracks of rich black mold, red loam, and friable clays, with mixtures of these soils in great varieties; at some miles distance from the sea, the country swells into fine hills and ridges, which are all covered with forest trees, and the soil on many of these is rich and deep, an advantage not common in poor countries. The river Hudson which is navigable to Al-

bany, and of fuch a breadth and depth as to carry large floops, with its branches on both sides, intersect the whole country, and render it both pleasant and convenient. The banks of this great river have a prodigious variety; in some places there are gently fwelling hills, covered with plantations and farms; in others towering mountains foread over with thick forests: here you have nothing but abrupt rocks of vast magnitude, which seem shivered in two to let the river pass the immense clefts; there you fee cultivated vales, bounded by hanging forests, and the distant view completed by the Blue Mountains raising their heads above the clouds. In the midft of this variety of scenery, of such grand and expressive character the river Hudson flows, equal in many places to the Thames at London, and in some much broader. The shores of the American rivers are too often a line of swamps and marshes; that of Hudson is not without them, but in general it passes through a fine, high, dry, and bold country, which is equally beautiful and wholesome. The right of the state of the

In general the foil of this province exceeds that of New England: besides the varieties I have already mentioned, there is on Long Island fands that are made quite fertile with oyster-shells, a fish caught there in prodigious quantities : they have the effect of shell marle in Scotland. The productions of New York are the same in general as those of New England, with an exception of some fruits that will not thrive in the latter country; but almost every article is of a superior quality: this is very striking in wheat, of which they raise in New England, as I have already observed, but little that is good, whereas in New York their wheat is equal to any in America, or indeed in the world, and they export immense quantities of it; whereas New England can hardly supply her own consumption.

They sow their wheat in autumn, with better success than in spring: this custom they pursue even about Albany, in the northern parts of the province, where the winters are very severe. The ice there in the river Hudson is commonly three or sour seet thick. When professor Kalm was here, the inhabitants of Albany crossed it the third of April with six pair of horses. The ice commonly dissolves at that place about the end of March, or the beginning of April. On the 16th of November the yachts are Vol. I.

put up, and about the beginning or middle of April they are in motion again. If wheat will do here in autumn, where the ground is sometimes frozen four feet deep, one would apprehend it would succeed even more to the north.

Wheat in many parts of the province yields a larger produce than is common in England: upon good lands about Albany, where the climate is the coldest in the country, they fow two bushels and better upon one acre, and reap from 20 to 40: the latter quantity however is not often had; but from 20 to 30 bulhels are common, and this with fuch bad husbandry as would not yield the like in England, and much less in Scotland. This is owing to the richness and freshness of the soil. In other parts of the province, particularly adjoining to New Jersey and Pensylvania, the culture is better and the country more generally fettled. Though there are large tracts of waste land within twenty miles of the city of New York.

Rye is a common crop upon the inferior lands, and the fort they produce is pretty good, though not equal to the rye of England. The crops of it are not fo great in produce

produce as those of wheat on the better lands.

Maize is fown generally throughout the province, and they get vast crops of it: They chuse the loose, hollow loams, or sandy lands for it, not reckoning the stiff or clayey ones will do at all for it: half a bushel will feed two acres, and yield an hundred bushels in return: about Albany, where they have frosts in the summer, maize suits them particularly, because the' the shoots are damaged, or even killed by the frost, yet the roots fend forth fresh ones. Maize, from the greatness of the produce, may eafily be supposed a rich article of culture, and especially in a province that has so fine an inland navigation through it as New York. It is also of great advantage in affording a vast produce of food for cattle in the winter, which in this country is a matter of great consequence, where they are obliged to keep all their cattle housed from November till the end of March, with exception indeed of unprovident farmers, who trust some out the chief of the winter, to their great hazard.

Barley is much fown in all the fouthern parts of the province; and the crops they fometimes get of it are very great, but the

grain is not of a quality equal to that of Europe, They make much malt and brew large quantities of beer from it at New York, which serves the home consumption, and affords some also for exportation. Pease are a common article of culture here, and though uncertain in their produce, yet are they reckoned very profitable; and the ftraw is valued as winter food. Thirty bushels per acre they confider as a large crop, but fometimes they get scarcely a third of that. Oats they fow in common, and the products are generally large; fixty bushels an acre have been known on land of but moderate fertility. Buckwheat is every where fown, and few crops are supposed to pay the farmer better, at the same time that they find it does very little prejudice to the ground, in which it resembles pease.

Potatoes are not common in New England, but in New York many are planted; and upon the black, loofe, fresh woodland they get very great crops, nor does any pay them, better if so well, for at the city of New York there is a constant and ready market for them; I have been affured that from five to eight hundred bushels have been often gained on an acre.

There are many very rich meadows and pastures

pastures in all parts of the province; and upon the brooks and rivers, the watered ones (for they are well acquainted with that branch of husbandry) are mown twice and yield large crops of hay. In their marshes they get large crops also, but it is a coarse bad fort; not however to a degree, as to make cattle refuse it, on the contrary, the farmers find it of great use in the winter support of their lean cattle, young stock, and cows.

The timber of this province confifts chiefly of oak, ash, beech, chesnut, cedar, walnut, cyprefs, hickory, faffafras, and the pine; nor is there any preceptible difference in their value of the wood here and in New England; though it declines, for thip building when you get further to the fouth; with some exceptions however, for there are other species of trees even in the most fouthern colonies that are equal to any for that purpose. New York not being near so much settled as New England, timber is much more plentiful, fo that the planters and new fettlers make great profit by their lumber. Upon most of the streams that fall into the river Hudson, there are many faw mills for the mere purpose of fawing boards, planks, and other forts of lumber, which are are the High trees

Which goes down in immense quantities to New York, from whence it is shipped for the West Indies. We shall by and by see that this is a very great article in the profit of every planter. Among all the woods of this province, are found immense numbers of vines of several species, and quite different from those of Europe, some of the grapes resembling currants rather than ours. Wine has been, and is commonly made of them, but of a fort too bad to become an article of export.

Hemp is cultivated in all parts of the province, but not to a greater amount than

great article in the exports; it succeeds extremely well, and pays the farmer a considerable profit. Lintseed oil is another article of export, the seed for which is raised by the planters; but more is exported unmanusactured. Turnips also are grown in large quantities, and by some planters upon a system much improved of late years. The fruits in this province are much superior to those in New England; and they have some, as peaches and nectarines, which will not thrive there. Immense quantities of melons, and water melons are cultivated in the fields near New York, where they come to

as great perfection as in Spain and Italy; nor can it well be conceived how much of these fruits and peaches, &c. all ranks of people eat here, and without receiving any ill consequence from the practice. This is an agreeableness far superior to any thing we have in England; and indeed, the fame superiority runs through all their fruits, and feveral articles of the kitchen garden, which are here raifed without trouble, and in profusion. Every planter and even the smallest farmers have all an orchard near their house of some acres, by means of which they command a great quantity of cyder, and export apples by thip loads to the West Indies. Nor is this an improper place to observe that the rivers in this province and the fea upon the coast are richly furnished with excellent fish; oysters and lobsters are York. I am of opinion they are more plentiful than at any other place on the globe; for very many poor families have no other subsistence than oysters and bread. Nor is this the only instance of the natural plenty that distinguishes this country : the woods are full of game, and wild turkles are very plentiful; in these particulars New York much exceeds New England in colla

H 4

Thefe

These upon the whole are circumstances which contribute much to the plenty and happiness of living in this country; and among other causes, contribute very greatly to the plenty and general welfare of all ranks of the people, nor should I here omit making some observations on the state of the settlers and other inhabitants.

To what causes it is I know not, but New York is much less populous than New England to the north, and Penfylvania to the fouth: there is no circumstance that prefults from nature, or from the government of the province that can account for this: but to whatever cause it may be owing. certain it is, that we ought to efteem it as fortunate for fuch persons as now chuse to fettle there. There are vast tracts of unpetented land yet remaining on the river Hudson and its branches, which abound in every beneficial circumstance that can render a new country desirable to settle in. This however, will not, in all probability last long, for the new settlements increase every day; so that in a few years there will not be many fuch spaces abounding in wood and navigable water unoccupied a terror me observe and had guest on

But there is one mistake made by most

new fettlers, especially on the river Hudfon; they have in general an idea that the only good foils are the deep black loam, or clays; and accordingly reject all the tracts that confift of a thin reddift loam on rock; but I have been affured by some intelligent gentlemen, that experiment has proved this foil, though so thin, fertile to a great degree in most of the productions which are common in the whole province: they have mentioned particularly, barley, peafe, potatoes, turneps, clover, and even wheat. And as a confirmation that this opinion was just, I was favoured with the following particular of the produce of a field of this foil, which having been rejected by feveral new fettlers, was planted by the person to whom I am obliged for this intelligence. The piece of land contained fixteen acres, the foil a light thin loam, of a reddish colour, on a lime-stone rock.

First year.

Grubbed, ploughed, and prepared for potatoes, and planted without dung : produce 11000 bushels, which were sold at 10d. per bulhel, which is 4531,

Second year,

Ploughed once, and fown with wheat, produce 512 bushels, which fold for 851. Third

-bull with Third year. the states won

Planted again with potatoes, produced 8490 bushels, which fold for 10d. a bushel, or 3541.

Fourth year.

Sown with wheat again, produce 600 bushels, which fold for 120 l. Fifth year denath thol ads

Sown with barley, produce 730 bushels, which fold for 731.

Disagne grand Sixth year? tent openant agad

Ploughed once, and fown with peafe; the produce 630 bushels, which fold for 334°

With this crop of peafe clover was fown, and left an excellent pasture, which was reckoned as profitable as any other piece of land in the whole plantation.

Pirft year,	onei land	ne ppace	Timeson	453
Second do.	adgil p	Hill ada	Jeroa i	82
Third do.	(a limer)	no Juole	op dibbs	354
Fourth do.	earthan'	Fight y	a traffic	120
Fifth do.	d abda a	badgeole	bbed	73
Sixth do.	taodria	shorastq	bne mand	poteto
er er fold at	w aloidw	, ledlad	00011	2000

Total £. 1138

Which is near L. 11 15 o per acre per

Now

Now upon this account I have feveral remarks to make, which I think important, as it shews what may be done in this country, by good husbandry, even when no manure is used. The reader doubtlefs observes, that the fiftem of management in this field ran upon the principle of an intervening crop of potatoes or peafe between every two of wheat and barley. This is the hufbandry which I would always recommend, but which is diametrically opposite to the practice of the New York planters , who make not the least foruple of taking fix or eight crops successively of maize, wheat, rye, barley, or oats, without ever thinking of the least necessity of introducing peafe, buckwheat, turneps, clover, or any other plant which in its nature or culture would prove a preparation for corn. The idea exemplified in the preceding sketch shews quite a different thall infert with pleafifoubnos

In the next place I must observe, that the register of this field shews strongly the importance of cultivating potatoes on fresh woodlands; the products here reaped from them exceed infinitely those of any other crops, which should animate the farmers of this province to extend the culture of them:

The same gentlemen to whom I am indebted for the preceding account, gave me
another of the expences and product of a
considerable plantation on the river Hudson. This I shall insert with pleasure; for
such accounts are what I have most aimed
at gaining for all the colonies, not always
with success indeed, but it is only from
such that we can form a just idea of the
advantages and disadvantages of American
husbandry. Such accounts of agriculture
in Europe are common in numerous books,
while

while the management and state of the agriculture of the colonies has been little attended to, for which I am clear no good

reason can be assigned.

The plantations in question confisted of 1600 acres, situated partly on the banks of the river Hudson, and partly on each side a small river that runs into it; the purchaser was not the first settler, for the land was marked out, a house built, and some offices, with a small tract of land cleared; nothing, however, was done either expensively, or with good judgment; and the place was in a state of neglect when purchased. The price was 3701.

A small saw-mill, and additional offices were built on it immediately, which with some other improvements, of no great a-

mount, came to 2601.

Eight hundred acres were grubbed, and the trees fawn and rived into plank, board, shingles, and staves: the whole expence of which was 1162 l. Many of the trees were oak and elm, of great size; also some limes of extraordinary growth.

Eight new inclosures were made, the fences, posts, and rails and ditching, with

all expences, came to 32 l.

Provident.

The	flock	fixed	on	the	planta	ation	was as
follows	:	1 34	A AL		44 34	7921	laramon 6

	esu zomo	100 200	io amin'n	1 21 1 K
Eight negroe	s, at 341.	nointy no	Wed to, f	272
Four indente				132
Two hired by				72
Three Germ				81
Servants provided who	at produced,	loathing for	negroes,	56
Implements		expences o	of, exclu-	87
five of tin		300538	r tovia 11Sc	
Salary of ove		8,	A 123 2 26 27	110
Seed for the			ACALL SO W	90
Sundry exper	ices,	orles an	o balkaffi	113
Cattle,	ANT WORK	440000000000000000000000000000000000000	Ada to	230
Provisions, 8	cc. for 3 year	5, -		300
Friday 13	uico anab	16.45 4.040	mon Suid	
Stir tonia.	redement	beog n	IW to to	1543
	AND THE REST OF	alternation of the	and the state of the state of	1 6 5

The produce of the three years, in various articles, came to the following fums.

	boards, at 51. 2s.	NATION - CONTRACTOR SENSON SERVICE - N. + L. (2007) - T. (2007) - N. + L. (2007)	s. d.
970 plank, at	38. 8d.	- or ome 177 :	16 0
	gles, at 12s. per 1 at 4l. 10s. per 10		
260 pieces of	timber, at 78. 6	d. 97	0.0
	s of various kinds,	7 10/	10 0
10 conoci co	28081-77, 37813 1.8	gies, and nevel cizewas 1162 L	Mill

Recapitulat	ion. 1. s.d.
Purchase,	370 0 0
Saw-mill, &c.	- X - 7/260 0 0
Clearing 800 acres,	1162 0.0
Eight inclosures,	32 0 0
Stock,	- 1243 0 0
Provisions,	300 0 0

Total 3367 0 0

Luguras un nuntral al a	211.
The annual after expence was	
Interest of capital,	1. s.de
Repairs, 2042 orong tog glad one esquator	12 0 0
Inclosing,	10 0 0
	16 0 0
Servants wages,	135 0 0
Sundry expences,	100 0 0
of the following on straining the same	CONT. Od.
000	454 7,0
Produce 1st year.	ope of al.
	1. s. d.
4 acres of potatoes, 260 bushels per acre, 2	34 13 0
1040 bushels at 8d 3 82 acres Indian corn, 30 bush. per acre 7.	37.3
2460 bushels at 1s. 6d.	184 10 0
10 acres peafe, failed,	0 00
22 of wheat, 22 bushels per acre, at 38.	72 12 0
	91 15 0
	HOLD STREET
Produce 2d year.	Lacond
aton top as a fall the set of the first	1. s. d.
6 acres potatoes, 200 bushels per acre, 1200 bushels, at 10d.	50 00
126 acres Indian corn. 22 buth, per acre.	1 11 4 1 3 1
4320 bush. at 18. 6d [324 0 0
90 acres wheat, 20 bush. per acre, 1800 }	270 00
bush. at 38 5	Debot's
at 18. 3d	37 10 0
40 acres barley,	Three h
2 do. potatoes, 16 turneps,	
35 oats, for plantation,	0 00
32 clover,	24 110
20 Indian corn,	VALUE OF
416 acres in culture.	681 10 0
8	Pro-

-	82 26 66	1,000,000	2-2-2	THE PERSON OF
10-/				
11	JUU		70	year.

MARKET AND THE STATE OF THE STA		3-1
0 C 801	lo B	s. d.
8 acres potatoes, 300 bush. per acre, 2400 bush. at 10d.	50	00
170 acres of Indian corn, 35 bush. per acre,	480011	CALC CLA
EDEO DUID. 21 28		00
bush, at 3s.	3 144	00
80 acres peafe; 40 failed, 40 at 10 bush.	25	0 0
Cattle,	87	10 0
2 potatoes, 20 barley,		
20 oats, for plantation,	0	0.0
10 Indian corn, 2 wheat,	1	4
38 turneps,	nd-fee	
A STATE OF THE STA	نست	تعالباه
560 acres in culture.	901	10 0
A MARKET CONTRACTOR STATE OF THE CONTRACTOR	1.	s. d.
First year,	291	15 0
Second,		10 0
Third,	901	
Lumber,	951	8 6
the state of the s	2826	3 6
Capital. Con a same are dad or short w	3367	-00
Product first three years,	826	36
Remains,	540	16 6
Three years interest,	504	00
	71 b	
A) for plantation, so or o	1044	16 6
	SOLA	ALTERNATION OF

800 acres were foon in culture, which were usually employed in the product of

8 aeres

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 112 8 acres potatoes, 50 100 do. Indian corn. too do. wheat; mort- nistan ar at nut . Argoo 40 do peale, marginal that the preas sun 60 200 do. clover, to barramos adr ai guillest ni 20 do oate en astacle ada made, viscore lo 80 do. turneps, 32 do. fundries, including orchard and yielding, Cattle; i eldarabilnos anidiamol reid estos Fruit, Fruit, Annual lumber, bed reven des deidw deleta 35 not money enough to clear away the 200 ods speedily. Half this capital Expences, dendiriogare a bleiv too bloow re brothe ton train ti vietteox Profit L. 541

This profit is, besides the annual improvement of waste, from which the lumber is cut, and also the advantage of the surrounding wastes, which are granted as fast as the family increases; but which will not admit of calculation, because wastes are converted to profit merely in proportion to the ability, that is the money, of the planter.

The first observation I shall make on this account, is the lumber paying nearly the expence of clearing, which is an high advantage, and certainly owing to the expedition of the saw-mill: in many parts of the northern provinces, where a saw-mill is not used, the expence of clearing is in-

finitely the greatest part of a new settler's work. But it is plain from every article in this account, that the great advantage in fettling, is the command of a large fum of money, that the planter may go spiritedly to work, and make his ground produce him fomething confiderable immediately, which can never be done if he has not money enough to clear away the woods speedily. Half this capital I am clear would not yield a proportionable profit; on the contrary, it might not afford half such interest for the amount. It is by means of this advantage, that near two thirds of the whole expenditure is repaid by the product of the three first years, which would be far enough from the case, if the fum of money at the beginning of the undertaking had been much less. If the planter's time and trouble, for three years, be not reckoned, as indeed it need not in reason be, then the sum of 10441. might be reckoned the original capital, which would make the annual profit on the undertaking immensely great.

But the great superiority of the account of this improvement, over those that can be made in the cultivated parts of Europe, is the *increase* of cultivation. The account

here

here is stated at 800 cultivated acres, and 601. a year from lumber; but this does not include the annual increase of the cleared land, which may be carried on as fast as the planter's money will allow. Instead of 601. a year in lumber, it might be 2 or 3001. by having hands enough, and the land, when cleared, all brought into culture, at the same profit as the first 800 acres; the quantity of land to be had does not stop, let him be as able and industrious as he will. This advantage I think greater even than the making the profit above stated.

For here let us consider, that in the cultivated parts of Britain, or any other European country, a farmer, who is on fuch a farm as 30001. will stock, supposing him to make as great an advantage as this planter, lies under two disadvantages; tho' he has this neat income of 541 l. per annum from his business, he lives in a country where such an income is very easily spent. even by a farmer, and actually is spent by many farmers, without their making in any respect the appearance of gentlemen, which is owing to the luxury of the age. and the high prices of every thing in the country. Secondly, if on the contrary he 1 2 does

does not spend such an income, but lives frugally on a part of it, and is defirous of expending the remainder to the best advantage, he cannot throw it into an annual increase of his business, because he is on every fide furrounded by the farms of his neighbours; and though he may now and then hire other farms, it is not to be depended on; and if they do not join his old one he will be better without them; besides the circumstance of such farms being probably either too large, or too fmall for the money he has to spare: for that the only advantage he can, in a general way, put his favings to, is the common interest of four or five per cent.

The case of the New York planter is very different. For first he makes his income of 541 l. a year, in a country where money is so dear, and most things so cheap, that he may live upon a part of it in a way far more genteely, upon a comparison with all his neighbours, than he could do with twice the total in England, the consequence of which must naturally be a far greater probability of a person's saving at least a part of his income, than if he lived where the whole of it would hardly support him. Secondly, upon the supposition of his spend-

ing only a part of his income, he has the advantage of being able to throw the remainder, like a merchant, immediately into business, and to make it pay him as good interest for his money as his original stock. He has only to increase his fervants, his cattle, and his works proportioned to the fum of money he has annually to lay out, which gives a proportioned increase of land under culture, and consequently an increase of crops to sell: this refults from his fettling in an uncultivated country, and is upon the whole, so great an advantage, that it overbalances an hundred inconveniences. For by means of this circumstance, the planter is able to make a continued compound interest of all the money he can raise, at the rate of from 40 to 100 per cent. till he has enlarged his cultivation so much as to be incapable of management. The immense increase of compound interest is well known, yet ought not the reader to startle at the proposition: suppose the planter lives upon, or, more properly speaking, spends in manufactures, wine, tea, fugar, spices, and spirits, 2411. per annum, he has then 300 l. per annum for improvements; which 3001. the first year, will clear a certain portion of waste

plainly a compound interest.

But here let me observe, that this prodigious advantage is not annexed to the mere fettling in New York; on the contrary, the cultivated parts of the province are in this respect exactly upon a par with Britain; for fixing in a plantation, in that part of the province, would be fixing in a fpot furrounded with other plantations, and consequently possessing no great part of this advantage which I have been endeavouring to explain. It is only in the back country, which is yet forest, that new settlers can find plenty enough of land to be fecure of those additions to their farms, which are attended, when made, with fuch bene-Nor is it only in this respect that the waste country is the most eligible to settle

in; there is so much greater choice of land through such parts of the province than in the other, and the land of course so much better, that although plantations are often to be bought cheap in the cultivated parts, yet is it more adviseable for these reasons to settle in the back country; always provided there is a navigation near the farm, for all land products are in America, too cheap to

bear a land carriage.

This comparison between New York and Britain is so much in favour of the former, that I think it is necessary to make some observations upon that part of the state of agriculture in Britain, which gives such a fuperiority to America: not that I shall enter into a full calculation of this point. But at present I must observe, that the reafon of this inferiority of Britain is not a want of land-for the wastes of this country including those of Scotland and Ireland, amount probably to more than a third of the whole territory; nor is it a want of fertility in those lands, but it is the mischief of being in hands that will neither cultivate them themselves, nor yet let A man may in New York, &c. have land in fee-simple for demanding it, and complying with certain reasonable conditions,

ditions, which leave him absolute master of the foil for ever. In Britain he may apply for waste land, and he will be answered that he shall have a lease of 21 years, perhaps only of 7 or 14; and upon such a lease he is to build, without a flick of timber, and enter into very great expences: this at once banishes the scheme in any prudent person, and makes any common husbandry more profitable. Thus is it found, that when the wastes in a country are in private hands, they are like to remain fo, except what a few fensible active individuals do upon their own estates, which bears scarcely any proportion to the quantity that remains waste. This is of most pernicious influence upon the public good, which is fo intimately concerned in all wastes being cultivated. No man ought in fuch a wealthy, induftrious country as Britain, where every product of the earth bears such an high price, to be allowed to keep waste lands in his possession above a certain number of years; if by a given time they are not in culture,. or at least a considerable part of them, and the work going on, then they ought to be forfeit and affigned in the American manner to whoever will comply with the terms of the grant. Doubtless, this will appear

to the generality of the people in this country as a very wild scheme; and so it may be, but nevertheless the evil is not less real. nor does it less demand a remedy. Were the wastes of Britain to be granted away in small portions, in the same manner as those of America, we should see them peopled, and as well cultivated as the rest. of the kingdom; notwithstanding the general want of timber on them, and their not being equal in fertility to the woodlands of America. And here I must further observe, that this state of the case shews the great reasonableness, and even importance of strenuously infisting on the new and old fettlers in all parts of the continent, performing their conditions of taking no more land than they people in the required proportion. Letting any persons take up more land than they can moderately people, is bringing the same mischievous consequence on America, that we experience in Britain; for the wastes in America that are private property, are of little more use to the public than if they did not exist.

The account of a settlement given above, is not to be supposed a picture of the profit, which every one makes by going to New York; I would on no account, have it imagined

imagined that this is the case: this was executed by means of a large fum of money, for so 3000l. must be reckoned in America; and not only by a fum of money, but also by the exertion of much better husbandry than is common in the colonies. So far from every fettler making a profit like this, not one in forty equals the proportion of it. In general, the fettlers come with a small sum of money, very many of them with none at all, depending on their labour for three, five, or seven years to gain them a fum fufficient for taking a plantation, which is the common case of the foreign emigrants of all forts. It is common to fee men demand, and have grants of land, who have no substance to fix themfelves further than cash for the fees of taking up the land; a gun, some powder and shot, a few tools, and a plough; they maintain themselves the first year, like the Indians, with their guns, and nets; and afterwards by the same means with the affistance of their lands; the labour of their farms, they perform themselves, even to being their own carpenters and smiths: by this means, people who may be said to have no fortunes, are enabled to live, and in a few years to maintain themselves and families

milies comfortably. But fuch people are not to be supposed to make a profit in cash of many years, nor do they want, or think of it. And as to the planters who begin their undertakings with small sums of money; though they do better, and even make a confiderable profit by their business, yet are they very far from equalling what I have now described; this is for want of money, for I might add, that not one new fettler in a thousand is possessed of a clear three thou-

fand pounds.

The conclusion which I deduce from these particulars is, that new settlements in New York are undertaken to good advantage, profit in money confidered, only by those who have a good sum of money ready to expend; and by this term, I mean particularly men who have from two to five thousand pounds clear; in Britain such people cannot from the amount of their fortune get into any valuable trade or manufacture, unless it is by mere interest, or being related to persons already in trade. But it is evident, that in New York, they may, with such a sum of money, take, clear, stock, and plant a tract of land that shall not only amply support them in all the necessaries of life, but at the same time yield

yield a neat profit sufficient for the acquifition of a confiderable fortune.

I shall next lay before the reader the exports of this province as taken on an average of three years since the peace.*

Flour and biscuit 250,000 barrels, at 20s. f.	250,000
Wheat 70,000 qrs	70,000
Beans, peafe, oats, Indian corn and other grains,	40,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and venison,	18,000
Bees wax 30,000 lb. at 1s	1,500
Tongues, butter, and cheese	8,000
Flax feed, 7000 hhds. at 40s	14,000
Horses and live stock	17,000
Product of cultivated lands,	418,500
Timber planks, mafts, boards, flaves, and flingles	25,000
Pot ash, 7000 hhds	14,000
Ships built for fale, 20, at £,700	14,000
Copper ore, and iron in bars and pigs	20,000
-red named anterest of her to.	26,000
AND THE RESERVE OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERT	and the same

Let me upon this table observe, that far the greater part of this export is the produce of the lands including timber; and even the metals may be reckoned in the same class; this shews us that agriculture in New York is of such importance as to support the most considerable part of the province without the assistance of either

[·] American Traveller, p. 73.

the fishery or of commerce; not that the city of New York has not traded largely, perhaps equal to Boston, but the effects. of that trade have been chiefly the introduction of money by the means of barter, besides the exportation of their own products: whereas New England's exports confift five parts in fix of fifh, and the other products of the fishery; a strong proof that agriculture is far more profitable in one country, than in the other; for fettlers in colonies will never take to the fea, in a country whose agriculture yields well; but in very bad climates, and fuch as destroy instead of cherishing the products of the earth, any branch of industry pays better than cultivating the earth. This is a diffinction that ought to be decifive with those who have a choice to make which of these colonies they will go to ; for men do not usually fettle themselves in countries where they are to make their livelihood by encountering a boifterous fea, and leading a life of perpetual hardships and violent labour: This is very different from the employment of those who support themselves in so fine a country as New York, by agricalcous growth came, but flich sautlus

would freely cats the girl would in

the filhery or of commerce; not that the

problem square follow, but the sacci

Propositions for the improvement of the husbandry of New York—Bad management —Better system—Vines—Winter food of cattle, &c.

ore produced an on

HE rural management in most parts of this province is miserable: seduced by the fertility of the foil on first fettling, the farmers think only of exhausting it as soon as possible, without attending to their own interest in a future day: this is a degree of blindness which in sensible people one may fairly call astonishing. The general system is to crop their fields with corn, till they are absolutely exhausted; then they leave them, what they call fallow, that is, to run to weeds for several years, till they think the soil has recovered fomewhat of its fertility, when they begin again with corn, in fuccession, as long as it will bear any, leaving it afterwards to a fallow of weeds. If no spontaneous growth came, but fuch as cattle would freely eat, the evil would not be great,

great, because then the land would not have more to support than it would gain by the dung, &c. of the flock supported. But the contrary is the case: an infinite quantity of rubbish comes which no beast will touch, this feeds the land in fo constant a succession, that the foil is never without a large crop on it. The extent to which this practice is carried would aftonish any person used to better husbandry: it is owing to the plenty of land; the farmers, instead of keeping all their grounds in good order, and a due succession of valuable crops, depend on new land for every thing, and are regardless of such management as would make their old fields equal the value of the new ones.

Instead of this, the New York farmers should imitate the conduct of those of Britain: they should never exhaust their lands; and when they were only out of order they should give them what ought to be esteemed the most beneficial fallow; that is, crops which, while growing, receive great culture, at the same time that they do not much exhaust the soil; such as all sorts of roots, and pulse, and every kind of leguminous plant, with the various kinds of clovers. By introducing these in proper

fuccession, the land is never exhausted. In the remarkable instance given of a plantation managed on this system, we find a crop of this nature introduced between every two of maize, wheat, barley, or oats, and in every round of the system, several years under clover, which is instead of the fallow of weeds of the generality of the New York farmers.

The benefit of pursuing this plan is very great; for the lands, when laid down to clovers, maintain more cattle on fifty acres than with weeds they would on four hundred; this quantity of cattle improves the ground by the summer feeding, and enables the farmer to raise great store of manure in the winter, by which means his crops of corn, &c. are by much more abundant. It surther keeps the whole plantation in a state of profit; whereas in the common method only a part, and that not the largest, is valuable at once, his dependence for product being only on the new broken up-lands.

New York farmers are very defective, is the management of their meadows and pastures: they make it a rule to mow every acre that is possible for hay; and as long

long as they get a tolerable quantity, they are strangely inattentive to the quality; weeds, rushes, flags, and all forts of rubbish, they call good hay, and suppose their cattle have not more sense in distinguishing than themselves. This is owing also to their grasping mere extent of land, and caring but little for the good husbandry of it. Many of their meadows are marshes, which, with little trouble, might be drained, and at once improved prodigiously, yet are fuch undertakings very feldom fet about: others of the up-land fort are equally filled with various weeds, from the flovenly manner in which they are laid down, or left to clothe themselves; but the appearance of these do not at all startle men whose ideas of agriculture are so little polifhed. breddie the climate

In respect to the management of cattle, and the raising manure, the farmers of New York are equally inattentive with their neighbours of New England.

I before observed, that vines of several forts grew spontaneously in all the woods of this province; and that wine, though bad, had been made of them: their being bad has no weight with me, since wild vines in no part of the world produce good Vol. I.

wine; but if they would plant vineyards of them, and cultivate them with the same care as is taken in wine countries, I have no doubt but they would produce excellent wine. Some endeavours have been made in this branch, by feveral patriotic persons in this province; but they have all been on the fcent of bringing vines from other countries, scarce any of which ever thrive, and fome of them will not live: the frosts are so excessive cold in winter, that these foreign vines, used to so different a climate, either come to nothing, or produce a grape very different from what they do in their own country. The inflance of the great fuccess with which the Dutch planted French vines at the Cape of Good Hope, proves nothing in this cafe, because the climate in general, at that Cape, is not only one of the finest in the world, but the winters are mild, and in every respect different from the peculiar climate of North America.

But good culture, and a proper choice of a high dry fituation, of which there are plenty in this province, and even rocky ones, would in all probability be attended with fuccess, and make these native grapes yield a wine that would add infinitely to the

the value of the exports of the province. This is an object of too much importance to be left to the dilatory proceedings of the planters themselves; they are in general engaged in a plain line of husbandry, from which most of them have not the rapacity or knowledge to deviate, and the rest want money for it. But the government should order a vineyard to be planted under the direction of an overseer skilled in this branch of agriculture, and also by the same means take care that it was cultivated in persection. The expence of this would not be great.

that province, and the heat is conctings very great in immers; but the air is clear, dry, as dependent and nuch imperior to the anotation to the anotation of their features; in New Leiby features; of their

are to be found, and confoquently it is

There is another difference in the climate of these two provinces, which has an intimate countries with her artiful wisters being conveniently added as reallewith.

been left out all scients.

2 CHAP.

e of the expens of the province.

CHAP. XI.

.....

NEW JERSEY.

Climate, soil, and productions of New Jersey — Agriculture — Defects — Improvements proposed—The people.

THE climate of New Jersey much resembles that in the southern parts of New York; they have sharp frosts in the winter, though rather less so than in that province, and the heat is sometimes very great in summer; but the air is clear, dry, and pure, and much superior to the more southern sea coasts, where are many swamps; in New Jersey scarce any of these are to be found, and consequently it is much the more healthy to the inhabitants.

There is another difference in the climate of these two provinces, which has an intimate connection with husbandry, the winters being so much milder, as to allow the cattle being left out all winter. Mr. Kalm took notice of this (which I before remarked was not the custom in New York.)

her.

Notwithstanding, says he, it snowed several days and nights together, and the fnow lay fix inches high upon the ground, vet all the cattle are obliged to flay, day and night, in the fields, during the whole winter. For neither the English nor the Swedes had any stables, but the Germans and the Dutch had preserved the custom of their country, and generally kept their cattle in stables during winter. Almost all the old Swedes fay, that on their first arrival in this country, they made stables for their cattle, as is usual in Sweden; but as the English came and fettled among them, and left their cattle in the fields all winter, as is customary in England, they left off their former cuftom, and adopted the English one. They owned, however, that the cattle suffered greatly in winter, when it was very cold, especially when it froze after rain; and that some cattle were killed by it in feveral places, in the long winter of the year 1741. About noon the cattle went into the woods, where there were vet some leaves on the young oak : but they did not eat the leaves, and only bit off the extremities of the branches, and the tops of the youngest oaks. The horses went into the maize fields, and ate the dry seas not the cufton in New York.

Not-

Jeaves on the few stalks which remained. The theep ran about the woods and on the cornfields. The chickens perched on the trees of the gardens at night, for they had no particular habitation. The hogs were likewise exposed to the roughness of the weather within a small inclosure *.

The foil in general is fandy, and upon the whole inferior in fertility to both New York and Pensylvania; it is an error in several writers, who have treated of the agriculture, &c. of these provinces, to class them together; for the foil on the fides of the river Delaware, which parts this province from Pensylvania, is quite different; on the New Jersey side it is all sandy, and on the other fide it is loam and clay.

The products are the same with those of New York, both in corn, and roots, and fruit, excepting that peafe are found to thrive much better in the latter; and the peaches of New Jersey are of a finer flavour

than those of New York.

On the most fandy parts of the province, and which to appearance are very poor, they cultivate maize to advantage; and on

^{*} Kalm's Travels into North America, Vol. II. p. 51. this

this fand it grows eight feet high; but in the cultivation of it they are very inattentive to its nature; fowing rye broad cast between the rows, which precludes that weeding and hoeing, which is so necessary to this plant. The asparagus plant is a common weed in maize plantations here. which, fowing rye, prevents the farmer from eradicating. Others, yet more flovenly, mark out the hillock for fowing the maize, and leave the intervals of five or fix feet untouched. About New Brunswic. Amboy, &c. and many tracts on the river Rareton, the foil is much richer, and the maize is finer: about this part the country is in general beautifully variegated, and almost entirely cultivated.

Buck-wheat is very generally cultivated in New Jersey, they find it pays them even as well as wheat, by its superior produce: they never give any other preparation to the land for it than one or two ploughings, and harrow in the seed, about a bushel and half to the acre, which yields them, if the season is wet, for dry years do not suit it, from 30 or 40 bushels on good land, and very seldom less than 28. They make bread, or, more properly speaking, cakes of it, which are eaten by every body, but its

K 4

fattening poultry and hogs.

Rye is a common crop in New Jersey, which is rather furprifing, for wheat yields as good products. What is extraordinary, the farmers in this country fow less feed rye than in England, where two bushels are the common quantity for an acre, but here they fow only one; they commonly receive twenty in return. Barley is cultivated in common over the whole province; they fow two bushels an acre, and receive from 30 to 50 bushels; this seems to be the grain which thrives better in the province than any of the European ones.

All the bread-corn of this country yields fufficient, in the very worst seasons, to feed the inhabitants; and not only to feed them, but at a reasonable and equable price: the bread eat by the lowest ranks, whether of maize, wheat, or rye, is of the finest sort that can be gained from the grain; nor is the crop in general ever known fo scanty as materially to affect the market price, which is greatly owing to the constant and regular exportation which always goes

forward.

Cabbages are lately cultivated here by almost every planter in the province, the fort

fort is the great white winter cabbage; it is not found only in gardens, but whole fields of it are common; it is eat in large quantities in every family, but the cows get no flight portion of the crop; for hogs also they are much esteemed. There are no tracts of good land in this province, without having portions assigned to the culture of hemp; which does extraordinary well here. To the north of New Jersey, the pieces fown with this plant are but small, but here, large fields of it are every where to be seen, which is a prospect that ought not a little to endear us to this country, for no staple produced in America, not even sugar, is more valuable. Unfortunately they nowhere produce more than is sufficient for home consumption; but this I apprehend, is owing to a want of sufficient encouragement; no object can demand it more, or pay us better for it, yet has not the legislature hit upon the proper effective means for extending the culture, fo as the mother country, as well as the navigation of New York and Philadelphia, may profit by it: an object which one cannot apprehend fo difficult as this negligence might make us believe.

In the most southern parts of the province; saffron is commonly planted; but the drug produced is not reckoned so good as that which is the product of England; this is not to be attributed to either soil or climate, for both suit it in an extraordinary degree; but they are not careful enough in the culture, nor in the manufacture of the commodity after it is produced; they do not weed the crops with that assiduous care which the planters of Cambridgeshire and Flanders exert, and which seems to be essential to the success; nor are they equally attentive to curing, drying, and caking of it.

They have, in various parts of New Jerfey many tracts of meadow land, much of
which is marshy; they mow them twice a
year, about the latter end of May, and the
end of August or beginning of September;
they get large crops of hay, some yield three
tons an acre at the two mowings, but it is
of a coarse fort: however the produce is of
great value in a country where the general
fault is the not laying in store of winter
provision for cattle. But there is a general
fault here in the management of all grass
lands, which is letting poor and indifferent
forts of grass occupy ground that would
yield much better forts: the marshes pro-

duce

duce nothing but the Carex. Another circumstance which should not be forgotten, is the planters neglecting the artificial graffes, which they might have upon their uplands, from their dependence upon these marshes; this has another bad confequence in making the farmers adopt a worse system than they otherwise would; for such farmers as have some marsh land, have no notion of fowing the clovers upon their arable fields, by way of a fallow; which one would suppose they must do, rather than leave them to rest without any other crop than weeds. This dependence on marsh land, however, by no means proves answerable to their cattle, for in no province are all the four-footed animals worse treated.

Every farm in New Jersey has a large orchard belonging to it, some of them of a size far surpassing any thing in England. The common fruits are apples and peaches, with some cherries and pears; the peaches are of a fine slavour, and in such amazing plenty that the whole stock of hogs on a farm eat as many as they will, and yet the quantity that rot under the trees, is assonishing. Apples are not suffered to go to such waste as they make cyder in vast quantities, and also export them by ship-loads to

the West Indies. This favourable climate to fruit is a circumstance of great importance to all ranks of people, especially the lower ones that settle there; fince it gives them a plenty of one article of food, very wholsome in this climate, without the least expence or trouble. Water melons also are in such plenty, that there is not a farmer, or even a cottager without a piece of ground planted with them: in some parts of the province they have whole fields of these and gourds. The country people eat them as they do in Naples and the Ecclesiastical State, at all times of the day while they are at their labour, when thirsty; in the fame manner as a labourer in England would drink ale or small beer; with this difference, that the fruit never intoxicates, and if taken with any tolerable moderation is perfectly wholesome.

In a word, I must observe, that the plenty of all the productions of nature which contribute to the food of mankind, which abounds in this province, is equal to what can be expected or wished for by any one; this is owing to the regularity of the summer scason; the summer frosts are of no account, they have no cold nights, the rains are not excessive, nor are they hardly

ever troubled with a drought; these important circumstances are of such effect, that the farmers are reaping or gathering some crop or other in every month from

May to November.

In respect of timber, their woods yield them all the trees that are found to the northward: with the circumstance of being plentifully stored with some of the most valuable forts; among these the white cedar figures particularly; being the most useful of all their trees. They use it in building preferably to oak, from its lasting longer, and the shingles made of it surpass all others; they are more durable at the same time that they are lighter, circumstances invaluable in shingles, where they have scarcely any other covering to their houses. All the churches, and the houses of the principal people have no other roofs. Of this tree is also made the best rails for fencing; nor are the posts of it bad, as it long refists putrefaction; great numbers of hoops are also made of it, and likewise staves. But considering the value of this tree, the people of New Jersey are very deficient in their care of it; the farmers and fettlers feem to make little account of it, but destroy all with the same relentless leverity

feverity that is common throughout all our colonies. The faffafras in much less valuable, yet they leave that standing fingly about their cleared fields.

Having thus particularized the principal products of the country, I shall, in the next place, offer a few remarks on the defects in the management of the farmers which are most striking; fince it is only by properly attending to these, that future improvements are to be expected. First I shall obferve, that their culture of maize deferves much reprehension: so luxuriant a vegetable demands great attention in the management while growing, particularly in the articles of keeping the plants quite clean from weeds, and ploughing the spaces between the rows often enough to keep them fine and well pulverized; instead of which I have before observed, that they fow rye in them, or elfe leave them to a crop of weeds; this is miferable management, and fuch as tends firongly to keep the ground in that bad state, which is a general enemy to all improvement; maize is of itfelf a very exhausting plant, and requires all the nourishment that can be given to it, this nourishment is not manure only, but the hoeings and ploughings which furround

plant that keep the land loofe, and kill all the weeds, and for this purpose there is no article of culture that is better adapted than one which will admit being planted at the distance of fix or eight feet square; for if the rows only were so far asunder, and the plants thicker together, they then could receive only the common horse hoeing, which would not be near so efficacious: it was certainly with this intention that good farmers first used this method of planting, nor could there well be a greater perversion of the method than keeping to the distances, and instead of ploughing, cropping them with rye.

I need not observe here, that in all countries one great principle of hulbandry is the procuring and using as much dung and manure as possible; the farmers of New Jerfey cannot raise hemp for exportation in large quantities, for want of more manure; yet do they give into one practice which is very negligent: they leave the straw of most the buck-wheat they cultivate about their fields in heaps, they find their cattle will not eat it, and so think there is no other use for it; but furely these men might restect on the importance of litter, as well as food for cattle; in the confumption of their hay and art.

and other firaw they might certainly use far more than they have, or perhaps can have; but to possess it on their own farms without using it, is unpardonable; nor is it a universal practice, which keeps the whole country in countenance, for there are some planters who have better ideas, use all their straw carefully for litter; and the advantage which these men reap from the practice ought furely to make the rest follow their example. There is no error in husbandry of worse consequence than not being sufficiently folicitous about manure; it is this error that makes the planters in New Jersey. and our other colonies, feem to have but one object, which is ploughing up fresh land. The case is, they exhaust the old as fast as possible till it will bear nothing more. and then, not having manure to replenish it, nothing remains but taking new land to ferve in the fame manner. Whereas would they be properly attentive, raifing as much manure as possible, at the same time that they introduced their crops in a proper fystem, so as to keep the land clean and in heart; in this case they would find no such necessity of changing the foil: and by the use of clovers in the manner they are sown in Britain, all their lands would be in pro-

fit, and perhaps equally profitable; instead of which they have now only a part under the plough that pays them any thing, and the rest are over-run with weeds and trumpery. One would imagine that the error of such a conduct would soon be discovered and rectified of itself; but the American planters and farmers are in general the greatest slovens in christendom; plenty of land ruins their husbandry in every respect of general conduct-neatness-good management-spirited attempts, &c. Kalm confirms these observations, and carries the cause back to the first coming of the settlers; he fays, " After the inhabitants have converted a tract of land into fields which had been a forest for many centuries together, and which consequently had a very fine soil, they use it as such, as long as it will bear any corn; and when it ceases to bear any, they turn it into pasture for the cattle (that is, leave it to whatever spontaneous growth of weeds comes) and take new corn-fields in another place where a fine foil can be met with, and where it has never been made use of for this purpose. This kind of agriculture will do for some time; but it will afterwards have bad consequences, as every one may clearly see. The depth and rich-VOL. I. ness

ness of the soil they found here who came Over from England (as they were preparing land for ploughing which had been covered with woods from times immemorial) miflead even the English, and made them careless husbandmen. It is well known that the Indians lived in this country for several centuries before the Europeans came into it; but it is likewise known that they lived chiefly by hunting and fishing and had hardly any fields. They planted maize, and some species of beans and gourds, and at the same time, it is certain that a plantation of fuch vegetables as ferve an Indian family during one year, take up no more ground than a farmer in our country (Sweden) takes to plant cabbage for his family upon, at least a farmer's cabbage and turnep ground taken together is always as extenfive, if not more fo than the corn-fields and kitchen gardens of an Indian family. Therefore the Indians could hardly subsist for one month upon the produce of their gardens and fields. Commonly, the little villages of the Indians are about twelve or eighteen miles distant from each other. From hence one may judge how little ground was formerly employed for corn-fields, and the rest was over grown with thick and tall trees; and

reason why agriculture and the knowledge of this useful branch is so imperfect here, that one can learn nothing on a large tract of land, neither of the English nor of the Swedes, Germans, Dutch, and French, except that, from their gross mistakes and carelessness for futurity, one finds opportunities every day of making all forts of observations, and of growing wife at the expence of other people. In a word, the corn-fields, the meadows, the cattle, &c. are treated with equal careleffness, and the English nation so well skilled in these branches of husbandry is with difficulty found out here. We can hardly be more lavish of our woods in Sweden and Finland than they are here: their eyes are fixed upon the present gain, and they are blind to futurity. Every day their cattle are harassed by labour, and each generation decreases in goodness and fize, by being kept short of food as I have before mentioned. On my travels in this country, I observed several plants which the horses and cows preferred to all others: they were wild in this country, and likewise grew well on the drieft and poorest ground, and where no other plants would succeed. But the inhabitants did not know how to turn this to their advantage,

The principal improvements wanting in the agriculture of this province, are the introduction of such general good management upon the common crops of the farmers, as to enable them to raise a

staple on some parts of each farm; suppose hemp and flax: at present their conduct is in general fo bad, that very many planters cannot raise an acre of hemp, &c. this is owing to the neglects which prevail fo much throughout their management; and especially to the badness of their systems: On the contrary, they should adopt the best British husbandry of introducing crops which yield both winter and fummer food for cattle, between fuch as are found most to exhaust the land; an idea, which would in the execution, bring with it a remedy for almost all the inconveniencies they feel at present, suppose they proceed in some such system as this:

- 1. Maize,
- 2. Roots for winter food of cattle, or cabbage,
- 3. Barley or oats,
- 4. Clovers,
- 5. Wheat.
- 6. Buck-wheat.
 - 7. Barley or oats,
 - 8. Roots,
 - 9. Roots,
 - 10. Hemp;

varied in different fields, so that the total quantities of each article might be proportioned

portioned to the fize of the plantation. Two crops of roots both well manured would be a preparation that would bring hemp on all the good and tolerable land in New Jerfey. In this fystem dung would not be wanting, because there is so much food for cattle cultivated, that great flocks might be, kept, which with a due management of litter would enable the planter to keep his fields always in heart, instead of the seventh crop of barley, perhaps maize might be thrown in again: it is true, it is a great exhauster, but then it yields such an immense quantity of excellent fodder, that, with a proper attention to cattle and dung, I don't know whether it may not more than make amends for that quality. The reader will observe, that if this system is changed for fuch as are common in Jersey, of corn in fuccession till a piece of land is worn out, so far from being able to have a portion in hemp, they cannot plainly do well even by their corn, fince only the first crops on a piece of new land enjoy a tolerable preparation. Nothing but such an improvement in the general management of common husbandry in our old colonies, can ever make hemp an article of exportation in them: and a circumstance which is continually L4

nually acting even against that, is the vast increase of people, which has of late years so raised the price of grain among them, as to make the culture of it much more profitable than formerly; this perhaps may rise higher still, and if that is the case, it may come to be more profitable than even hemp; which is not so rich a product to the farmer as those may think, who confider only the many hundred thousand pounds that are paid by England for it, Hemp is not near equal to tobacco in profit.

The inhabitants of this province confict almost entirely of planters; and though there are many confiderable estates for that country among them, yet in general they are little freeholds, cultivated by the owners; they have no town of any note, New York and Philadelphia being their places of export and import, Perth Amboy not being yet confiderable; this circumstance keeps them very much at home and pretty free from luxury, that is from the pleasures of a capital: they live in a very plentiful manner, which indeed they could hardly fail of doing in so plentiful a country; for no where on the coast are the necessaries of life in greater plenty. Fish, flesh, fowl, and fruits, every little farmer has

has at his table in a degree of profusion; and the lower classes, such as servants and labourers, atizans, and mechanics in the villages are all very well cloathed and sed; better than the same people in Britain. Tea, coffee, and chocolate, among the lowest ranks, are almost as common as tea in England; they are universal articles in every farmer's house, and even among the poor.

rices of the series of the ser

ni Bugot en eradwigan in min describie A pogleonge inte ni duady odkie i kannada Sili biodajni dominiote dot sometici kan

did it herver beceede a familie, net hewer-

the back of the A.P. XII.

end the lower clother, flob as ferverts and

PENSYL VANIA.

Climate of Pensylvania—Soil—Productions
—Agriculture—Defects—Improvements.

HE climate of Pensylvania has a strong distinction between the maritime and back parts; the former, for near a hundred miles, is much like New Tersey, or rather hotter; but the latter is more temperate and pleasant, neither so cold in winter, nor fo hot in fummer, being in all respects as agreeable and healthy a climate as can any where be found in America. The heat in this province is not sufficient for rice, nor is there that plenty of fwamp land (happily for the inhabitants) that is found more to the fouth; tobacco grows well in many parts of it, yet did it never become a staple, not however owing to the climate, for in Canada they have some tobacco. But for wheat and all kinds of plants, cultivated in Europe, with fruits, few parts of America exceed the back country of Penfylvania; that is to fay,

fay, the hilly (not the mountainous) tracts. The air is very clear and healthy; the fky ferene; and in general the climate agrees perfectly well with European constitutions. In the worst parts of the province, the winters, though fevere, confidering the latitude, do not generally last above two months, that is, the feafon of frost and fnow. In fummer, the heats here are great. and almost without intermission; but in the hilly parts these heats are, as I before observed much moderated: it is owing to this warm fun, that melons, water-melons, pumpions, and other fruits which here require hot-beds, and fome that cannot be raised with them, grow abroad, and in the common fields in a plenty, and of a flavour much superior to what is found more to the northwards; and though no better treated than turneps, they are ripe so early as July. Cherries are ripe by the twenty-fifth of May, and wheat is commonly reaped before the end of June. The months of September, part of October, April, May, and the first half of June, are the fine and agreeable months in this country.

A confiderable part of the foil of this province is a fand, or light fandy loam; these prevail chiefly in the maritime parts;

with

with variations however, for in some large tracts it is a strong loam, and in others clay. In the back parts of the province there are immense tracts of a black mould. and rich loam; and in general the new forest land has several inches, whatever may be the foil, of a light black mould, which is certainly formed in long process of time, by the putrefaction of vegetable substances. The finest parts of the province are the level tracts that join upon the Allegany mountains.

The productions of this country, in corn. timber, and fruits, are nearly the same as those of the Jerseys; only exceeding them in quality and plenty. Vines are in greater abundance, and mulberry trees among the most common in the province. fruits are finer, and if any thing in greater plenty: hogs are frequently fattened with peaches; for in the orchards they fall in fuch quantities, that great numbers are left to rot upon the ground.

Wood grows very scarce near Philadelphia, however plentiful it may be in the remoter parts of Pensylvania: the first feetlers, with the usual forefight of the Americans, destroyed the timber, as if it was impossible they should ever went any; divisi

which.

which, with the continued confumption ever fince, for building, firing, and by iron works, have so lessened it, that wood is almost as dear at Philadelphia, as it is in fome parts of Britain; indeed in winter, firing is one of the most expensive articles of housekeeping in that capital. The best fuel here is the hickory, a species of the walnut; then they prefer the white and black oaks. Notwithstanding the want of wood here, there are not far from Philadelphia some very considerable woods: but being the private property of people of fortune, they were referved for many years, in expectation of that high price which the commodity now fetches. Within these ten years much has been selled, but there yet remains large tracks full of very fine timber, which is every day cutting down.

In the productions commonly cultivated, wheat is the grand article of the province. They sow immense quantities, about the latter end of September generally; rising from two to three bushels of seed an acre, which on good lands yield from 25 to 32 bushels per acre; on fields of inferior quality, or such as are almost exhansted by yielding corn, they get from 15 to 25

bushels,

bushels, and sometimes not so much as 1 5, but this never happens without its being owing to previous bad management. Some few planters have summer fallow for wheat, in the English manner, but the common preparation is the ground lying what they call fallow, which is the same management as that of Jersey and New York; viz. leaving the land, after it is exhausted by yielding corn, to recover itself under a crop of spontaneous growth, weeds or whatever. trumpery comes: or else they fow it in fuccession, after wheat or other corn. It is owing to this general bad management that they get not greater crops; for in the back parts of the province are as fine lands for yielding this grain as any in the world; but foil alone will not do, good culture is no less requisite.

Nor is it to be forgotten here, for one should not praise or condemn in wholesale, that some planters have introduced the English way of sowing wheat on clover lays, which has been sound one of the greatest improvements that ever were introduced; for by this husbandry, the lands, at a smaller expence than usual, are made to yield much better crops. I may also remark, that this most beneficial practice.

encreases in Pensylvania. It is to be attributed to more enlightened knowledge foreading in the province, from the voyages to Britain being more frequent, and from books of husbandry being more read in proportion to the encrease of wealth and luxury: the same causes will doubtless by and by operate, however gradually, in introducing other practices, which in Europe have been found beneficial. I have been informed, that a gentleman in the back parts of this province, has introduced the culture of wheat by the drill plough, which was invented by Mr. Tull, an English writer, and fince perfected in France by M. du Hamel: it answered greatly; but the culture of maize is the completest horsehoeing husbandry of all others.

They fow large quantities of rye on their fandy lands, and on other fields, when they are exhausted with wheat; rye is reckoned to pay them in some parts of the province,

as well as wheat.

Barley is also a common grain in this country, though not so general as in Britain, where it yields the universal drink of all ranks of people; whereas in Pensylvania, the quantities of cyder made is prodigious, and rum is consumed in great

quan-

quantities; not however that beer is unknown, on the contrary they make much, and cultivate hops also with success. barley they fow four or five bullels on an English acre, generally in April, and it is ripe the end of July. Oats are managed in the same manner: the preparation for both these grains is common with that of wheat, save their giving wheat the preference in foil, and earliness in the system. They fow them on the American fallow of weeds; after one another, and very often after wheat and maize. Barley yields, on good land, from 30 to 40 bushels, and on bad from 20 to 25. Near the Allegany mountains, on some fresh land, from 50 to 65 bushels of barley have been known; a crop often exceeded in England, where good management more than ballances the advantages of soil and climate; 35 bushels of oats are reckoned a very good crop.

Maize is not cultivated in such quantities in some parts of Pensylvania, as in more northern colonies, where wheat is not so common. Here is a field of it near every farm house, but small in proportion to what is found in New Jersey, New York, &c. for the plain reason, that they cannot raise wheat to equal advantage. But in

fome

fome parts of this province, particularly the fandy ones, there are large quantities; they cultivate it nearly on the fame principles as in New Jersey, that is, in a most incomplete manner: for even rye is fometimes fown in the intervals, which is fuch a piece of bad husbandry, as ought to be banished by every man who would pride himself on having ideas of modern culture. Wheat thriving fo well in Pensylvania, makes them neglect maize; which is a much less valuable grain: this is a distinction which should always be made; it is not that maize is not a profitable crop in itself, but their lands will yield one which is much more beneficial. This will be the better understood, when I add, that Indian corn yields but 2s. 7d. a bushel, when wheat is at 7s. 6d. both Pensylvania currency; a difference that at once accounts for the preference in a country that will vield wheat.

Much greater quantities of hemp and flax are raised in this colony than in any to the northward: this is owing to a more favourable climate, and to a better soil; for in the parts of Pensylvania, adjoining to the Allegany mountains, are very large tracts of land, which are as favourable to Vot. I.

the production of these plants as can be wished: it is not want of good land in certain quantities, nor of climate, that prevents the export of hemp, but the demand for it at Philadelphia, which exceeds, forhome confumption, what the province can raise. Improvements might be made, of which more hereafter, that would enable Pensylvania to export hemp; but with out a change in certain branches of rural economy, they never will raise this commodity for exportation. A people increasing at such an amazing rate, makes the necessaries of life so dear, that no other husbandry, answers so well, that is, they possess not a staple that will pay them for a neglect of wheat and common provisions. Hemp and flax would be as proper ones as could be proposed to this colony, but they do not pay well enough to make them fuch objects as tobacco is in Virginia; and while that is the case, we may be certain it will never be planted. Of flax feed there goes annually to Ireland large quantities. The same is bear tot allow

have in this province a native flax, which promifes to be no treasure. It wis a fort of dogs-hane. The country people of the country people.

use it instead of flax, for various domeftic purposes; preparing the stalks of it in the fame manner as we prepare flax or hemp. They spin and weave several kinds of stuffs of it: it was of this plant that the Indians made a kind of linen bags, fishing net twine, and other manufactures, long before the Europeans fettled on this continent. It is an idea which ought to be purfued; what is at prefent used, is nothing but the quantity gathered wild as a weed; why not take the hint, and make it an article of culture? I have not a doubt but it would fucceed well, and answer all the purposes of the real flax, with this infinite advantage, that it is congenial to the climate, and confequently would thrive far better than flax, which has been imported here from Europe. Nothing can argue less attention to the agriculture of these colonies, than overlooking the natural productions of the continent, in favour of the transplanted ones, which it would be folly to suppose could thrive fo well; for the climate of North America is quite peculiar : even in the fouthern latitude of Philadelphia, which in Europe hardly knows what a frost is, the cold is fo fevere, that thips cannot ftir from that M 2 port anome

port for at least one month of the winter. Let us compare this with the same parallel in Europe, and we shall find the amazing difference of the two hemispheres. This ought to teach them the value of those productions, which are indigenous in the country; hemp, flax, and vines, are all instances, and striking ones.

Cabbages and turneps are commonly cultivated in Pensylvania, partly for the table, and partly for cattle, but by no means for the latter in the quantities they ought to be: they raife both of an immense fize, and without any very extraordinary culture, though they feldom attempt them without dung. One reason why they are bad husbandmen, in this respect, is the favourableness of the climate, which is such as to allow cattle to be out all winter, and to pick up their living in the woods; such a circumstance must necessarily render the farmers negligent in raising winter food . for cattle, which for fo many reasons is a point in husbandry so necessary in all forts of countries, fince none I ever yet heard of, is, from heat of climate alone, fo rich as to dispense with the want of dung. Another great disadvantage of this neglect of twinens and cabbages, is the want of them MIZ among ingt:

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 165
among the successive crops of corn which
the Pensylvanian farmers croud upon their
land in much too quick a succession.

Mulberry trees are among the most common productions of the province of Penfylvania; indeed, they are so plentiful, that filk might be made in any quantities, provided the country was populous enough; but agriculture answers so much better in a country where land is had almost for nothing, that people cannot make profit by filk worms; at least they think for yet for curiofity, fome families have kept them, and wound off large quantities of filk, more than fufficient to thew that any quantities might be made, if the people could or would find time for the bufiness. Nor do I think that any employment of their time would pay them better; efpecially confidering that fix weeks in a year is all that is required for making alki prante gringi di tuoni en contont

Buck-wheat is not fo commonly cultivated in Penfylvania, as more to the northward; what the reason for this is I know not, since it agrees perfectly well with the climate, and produces larger crops than in New York: perhaps they find wheat so much more profitable than any other pro-

duct, that they cultivate it on land, which more to the northward would be differently employed. They fow about a bushel and half to the acre, which yields fometimes more than forty bushels, but generally from 30 to 36. and with the said a standing

In several parts of Pensylvania, they are very well acquainted with the husbandry of watering meadow lands, by conducting brooks over them; which they do in a very artificial manner, bringing the water. in little streams along the fides of the hills, and letting it into the meadows at command. By this management, which agrees wonderfully in fo hot a climate, they mow three crops a year, whereas without water they would mow them but once, and at that mowing not get fo much as by the worst of the present three. This is an improvement well known in many parts of Europe, particularly on the Thames in England; in Flanders, in Lombardy, and in leveral of the provinces of Spain, but it is no where practifed to more advantage than in Penfylvania; which is furprifing, confidering the very low state in which most other parts of husbandry is found.

Many of the planters, especially in the back parts of the province, where the wild tracts

tracts are adjoining, keep great stocks of cattle: some of them have from forty to fixty horses; and four or five hundred head of horned cattle, oxen, cows, bulls, calves, and young cattle; they let them run through the woods, not only in fummer, but also in winter; which is a circumstance that makes them very inattentive to the providing winter food: sheep also they have in great numbers, and tho' the wool does not equal the best in England or Spain, yet is it much better than is produced in many of our counties, and makes cloth that answers exceedingly well for the general wear of the province, fine as well as coarse cloths; and accordingly. almost all the farmers, and their fervants, with the lower classes of other forts, are clad in it; they have no lands in the whole province but what do excellently for feeding sheep, even the very worst tracts maintain great numbers. Sheep are kept in fuch numbers, that wool might be a valuable article of exportation unwrought, and by a proper policy in the mother country, wool might become as good an import from the colonies as any other.

The farmers make their fences like those to the northward, of planks and posts; but M 4 in

in those parts of the province which have been long fettled, wood is too fcarce for this method, and they have substituted live hedges, not however with judgment, for they have taken the privet for this purpose, which badly answers it for want of spines; they have plenty of hawthorn, but have not yet sagacity to use it. They are in general, throughout the province, very careless of their fences, which is the confequence of having such plenty of land: confiderable plantations, that are not yet all under culture, have no other ring fence than marks fet upon the trees, so that the cattle turned into the woods may wander into those of other men, and others cattle make equal trespasses; and if the farm joins the wild country, it is the same. Some men are even fo careless, that when they take in a new field for corn, they will plough, fow, and fometimes reap it before they go about the inclosure, submitting to the depredations of cattle, rather than have the trouble of fencing it. There is nothing can give a man, that only travels through a country, so bad an opinion of the husbandry of it, as to fee two circumstances; first, the fences in bad order; and, fecondly, the corn full of weeds. In many parts of Penfylvania, Show

sylvania, a country in which nature has done so much, man will do so little, that both these are almost every where to be

feen by every traveller.

Pensylvania is not without negroe flaves for cultivation, though the number bears no proportion to the white fervants; it may also be proper to remark, that there are in this province, and it is the same in others, a difference in the white fervants; they have, throughout the province, the fame fort of fervants that perform work in England, that is, hired by the year, in which case, they are washed, lodged, and boarded, but find their own cloaths; an able bodied man, in husbandry, will get from 101. to 161. a year sterling. Maids will will get so high as 51. to 71. Another fort of white fervants, which are unknown in Britain, are the new fettlers that are poor. Very many of these cannot even pay their passage from Europe, which amounts to 101. sterling, and agree therefore with the captain of the ship, that he shall fell them for a certain number of years to be servants, in which case the farmers buy them, that is, pay their freight, &c. and this usually puts something also in the captain's pocket, beyond what he would unvigiani

The agriculture of the province is not equal to what the preceding productions would admit of; and to which they might be encouraged by foil, climate, and getting labour more plentifully than many other colonies. I have in two or three instances Dinawi . Ti

mentioned

mentioned bad management, and shall in speaking of their general conduct shew others.

Their system which is a point of so much importance is like that I have mentioned more than once to the northward. They sow a piece of land with wheat till it will bear wheat no longer, then they sow barley on it till it will bear that no longer, and perhaps after that they will do the same by various crops of oats, buck-wheat, pease, &c. The following is the system that was pursued in a large new field in a plantation near Durham about fifty miles to the north of Philadelphia, the account was given me, among several others concerning the same plantation, by a person on whose accuracy I can depend.

- -uli.5 Wheat, see mill make a grown de history
- -on271 Wheat, and and the valve brolds and The
- et g. Maize, oal alle guiffusdes sade gande
- was 4. Wheat, a sansantimos vocaldinos
- L'acc. Wheat, time the transfer of amoiding
- 6. Barley, la faith fooler of the barlaholist
- Traity. Barley, purmos de palar averello mistrait
- 10. 8. Barley, the someon business of the
- bid o. Dats, on the a like we don't menod
- onto. Barley, with a light and and the makes
- 11. Buck wheat, word area is a place in

others work a body from care that

our 2. Barley, seemagement bad benfilliam

rough Cate, no districted to the national

14. Peafe.

This is not only a proof of the planter's bad husbandry; it is also a proof of what excellent land it must be to yield such a fuccession of crops in plenty, enough to induce a man to fow them. After this follem for fourteen years, it was left what they call a fallow for feven years more; that is, the land unploughed for whatever spontaneous growth comes; for some years there is nothing but weeds, but there afterwards appears fome graffes thinly fcattered which cattle eat, many forts of fhrubs and trees also spring up, which the cattle feed on alfo, and if the land was fo to be left for twenty or thirty years longer, it would become a forest. as another order

This abfurd way of having an eye to nothing but exhausting the land as quick as possible by constant crops of corn, is pernicious to their interests: it is owing as I before said, to plenty of land, for new settlers always take up as much as they possible can, and far more than they know how to stock or cultivate: they can afford no care for manuring, nor yet to clear two piecess of ground for corn as long as one will

will bear it. They clear a field and have not strength of ploughs and cattle, and men to crop more than that; they therefore flick to it as long as they can get any corn, and when the land will no longer bear it, they clear another piece and ferve that in the fame manner, till they have run through their whole ground, and then they go back again to the piece they cleared first, which by that time is half forest, and half weeds and grass; this they clear again and fow it as before with corn as long as it will yield any. It is very evident that this must neceffarily be the fystem while the fettlers frend half their fortune in buying the land, that is, in paying the province fees for it: if a man has an hundred pounds in his pocket, and was able with it to cultivate properly forty or fifty acres; and he takes three or four hundred, which in patent fees costs him half his fortune, he then plainly leffens his ability to cultivate, while his cultivation ought to increase greatly. The writers on the subject of husbandry give very numerous inflances of this in England, where farmers are too apt to hire much more land than they have money to stock well and manage properly; no wonder therefore that in America we should see the STYSIE IN

the same error, where all sorts of people turn farmers—where no mechanic or artizan—sailor—soldier—servant, &c. but what if they get money take land, and turn farmers.

There are very few defects in rural œconomy, but many instances are here to be
produced; and many of which flow from
the same cause as their bad system, viz.
taking too much land for their money;
among which we are to rank their neglest
of the native products of the country, which
might be turned to profit, such as flax, vines,
mulberries, &c. The extreme carelessness
every where seen in the whole management
of cattle, their slovenly sences, their utter
inattention to raising manures, with other
circumstances, not of equal importance.

In this condemnation however, there is a tract of country around Philadelphia which is to be exempted: land here is of fuch value that they think it worth cultivating with some care. There are several estates in that neighbourhood, which are let for twenty shillings an acre; and which even at that rent have been sold at twenty-five years purchase. But all this is the neighbourhood of that slourishing and wealthy city: it does not hold to any great distance.

distance from that place. I must also exempt the lands of certain gentlemen who are fond of improvements, and who manage them in a manner superior to the generality of farmers, to whom it is a great reflection that they do not copy such better methods. These instances however are not so common as one could wish.

Duly confidering the state of husbandry in this colony, I shall venture to propose some improvements which I think would greatly further the interests of the inhabitants.

Their system is the first thing that demands attention, because a thousand evils flow from this alone; instead of exhausting their lands with perpetual corn crops, as long as it will bear them, they certainly ought to throw in corn with fuch moderation as never to exhaust the soil; to intermix crops of peafe, buck-wheat, turneps, cabbages, potatoes, clover, and lucerne among those of maize, wheat, barley, oats, and flax; this would keep the land clean and in heart; and when they had kept it in a system of corn as long as they wanted it, throw in the artificial graffes, that they might have at once a good meadow, instead of that miserable management which they

call a fallow. The land, in their fystem. after it is done with corn, is of no more value than the sky to them, for some years at least; but in the system now proposed, they would get meadows that would feed large herds of cattle, or yield at least a ton, or a ton and half of hay per acre immediately. The great advantage of pursuing a fystem of this nature, even upon their own principles, would be, that it admits their spreading their culture for fresh land in the manner they do at present; it only obviates the mischief arising from exhaust-

ing it, and leaving it of no value.

In this proposition I mentioned lucerne, a grass which I am confident would anfwer with them to a great degree, and for several reasons. They know not how to raise dung, from the circumstance of their cattle running abroad all the winter; for where cattle are not confined, no dung can be made. The want of dung makes them folicitous for fuch land, and at the fame time much confines their culture; with plenty of it, all their crops would be far more considerable: another point to be mentioned, is the heat of the climate, in a great measure, burning up the pastures, (except the watered ones) in all the mariall these inconveniencies, I propose lucerne. In that climate, the common broad cast culture would do for it, and perhaps best. They should use it for soiling (as the British farmers call the operation) their horses, cows, and other cattle, under cover all summer through, keeping them well and regularly littered with straw; and if they formed composts of the dung thus raised, with marle or loam, in the manner it is practiced in the West-Indies, it would be so much the better.

In this conduct they would, on a small quantity of land, be able to keep a large stock of cattle, which is alone a circumstance of great consequence in any country, and the quantity of dung they would be able to raise, if they used litter plentifully, would be of the highest importance in the management of their farms.

A union of this method with the improvement of their system, mentioned above, would not only vastly increase their products of corn, making one acre yield as much as two or three, but would also enable them at the same time to raise staples for exportation in a greater plenty than they do at present, slax seed being the Vol. I.

only one which they raise in their fields; both flax and hemp might then be valuable articles with them.

In the next place let me observe, that their inattention to vines is very inexcufable. In the back country they have hilly, and even rocky dry tracts of ground, that would in all probability answer perfectly well for them; their argument, that the wine made from these grapes at present is bad, is not a conclusive one: when planted in vineyards, and properly trained and dreffed, with the intervals between the rows, cultivated as in Europe, the produce might, and probably would be of a different flavour from the uncultured grapes now found under the drip of forest trees. It is at least a point that should be tried; for though the reasoning of the Pensylvanian farmers will never convince the world. fair experiment would; the importance of the object loudly speaks the expediency, not to fay, necessity of the trial. Another objection made here, is the want of hands; but that is obviating every day by extreme increase of population: nor do we know, with any accuracy, that the vineyard culture in America would not answer the prefent price of labour; it is to be remembered that they do not require attendance during the whole year, but only at an in-

confiderable part of it.

Another improvement which might be made, is the introduction of filk: mulberries are in great plenty throughout the province, and filk has been wound off there, equal to the finest that comes from India or Italy. The people do not in the least pretend that the climate is improper, their only argument is, that the price of labour is too high. But this is as mistaken as any thing that could be urged, for servants are in no countries hired to make filk; it is a work executed at a certain season of the year, which lasts only for fix weeks, by the females of a family, by the young, and aged, that cannot perform laborious work: this is the course of the business in the filk countries of Europe. Silk is a commodity that is never to be adopted, as the principal means of supporting a people, the time requifite for it is too short, as it leaves a fufficiency for other articles. Nothing can therefore be more abfurd than to urge the high price of labour as a reason why filk cannot be made in this province. Labour is yet dearer in Georgia, but filk is there made in large quantities.

N₂

The native flax is another article which ought to be attended to by sensible planters in this province. It is amazing to think that more experiments have not been made on it: it is certainly an article that promises great advantages: but trials of a nature more accurate and scientific than what is to be expected from the planters and farmers of this country. Persons should, by government, be appointed to examine into this matter, and to try what a proper cultivation will do in improving this production.

These and other articles of improvement, for the province of Pensylvania, deferve much more attention than they have hitherto met with. Why cannot the gentlemen of Philadelphia, and its neighbourhood, who are lovers of agriculture, form themselves into a society for the encouragement of that noble art? They might, in monthly meetings, be able to fettle a plan of operations, which would, in a few years, by means of an annual subscription, given in bounties and premiums, alter the face of things. They might reduce these doubtful points to certainty; they might introduce a better system of rural œconomy, and

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 181 and be in a few years of infinite service to their country.

Before I conclude this chapter, I shall insert a table of the exports of the province.

Biscuit flour, 350,000 barrels, at 20s f.	350,000
Wheat, 100,000 qrs. at 20s	100,000
Beans, peafe, oats, Indian corn, and other grain,	12,000
Salt beef, pork, hams, bacon, and venison,	45,000
Bees wax 20,000 lb. at 1s	1,000
Tongues, butter, and cheefe,	10,000
Deer, and fundry other forts of skins,	50,000
Live flock and horses,	20,000
Flax feed, 15,000 hhds. at 40s	30,000
Timber plank, masts, boards, staves, and shingles }	35,000
Ships built for fale, 25, at £,700	17,500
Copper ore, and iron in pigs and bars,	35,000

Total £. 705,500

Upon this account I must observe, that far the greatest part is the cultivated produce of the lands; which is the very contrary to New England, whose lands yield nothing to export. In proportion to this circumstance, is the value of a colony, for it is the nature of colonization, that the people ought, on first principles, to support themselves by agriculture alone. Wheat appears to be the grand export of this province: that, and other articles of food, amount to above half a million, which

N 3

is a vast sum of money to export regularly, besides feeding every rank of people in the utmost plenty; but of late years this has rifen to much more, for wheat, inflead of being at 20s. a quarter, is at above 30s. No circumstance in the world can be more strong, in proof of the temperature, moderation, and healthiness of the climate, than this of exporting such quantities of wheat, which, throughout the globe, thrives no where in climates infalubrious to mankind: though nearly a universal grower, yet it is an article of export only in good and wholesome climates: consider our European experience, the exports of wheat are from England and Poland to the coast of Africa. All the intermediate countries, from extremity to extremity, are temperate and fine climates. Barbary, though hot, is one of the best in the world; provided (as in all cases of climate) you fix in the tracts that lie properly with respect to other circumstances, such as a freedom from low marshy coasts, which in all countries, especially hot ones, are the most unwholesome in the world: hilly and mountainous tracts are generally wholesome and temperate. welfer bug tradi a societate aillis food, amount to above half a million. Theh

This export, of more than seven hundred thousand pounds worth of products, shews of what vast importance this colony is of to Britain; but I must observe, that in a national light it is much to be regretted, that a larger portion of this fum is not in what are commonly called flaples; that is, products which cannot be raifed in proper quantities in the mother country; or which she is forced to buy of foreigners, such are copper, iron, naval stores, flax seed, &c. The Pensylvanian export of these is,

Skins,	£. 50,000
Flax feed,	30,000
Timber,	35,000
Ships,	17,500
Copper and iron,	35,000

Total £. 167,500

As to wheat and provision, that part of them which goes to the West-Indies is in the light of a staple, but all that comes to Europe rivals the exports of Britain, and are to be confidered differently. fresh proof of the necessity of regulating the husbandry of Pensylvania, so as to enable the farmers to raise more of these valuable N 4

valuable products, which are of so great account to the mother country. This is a distinction which is very essential, and which good management may make as much for the advantage of Britain as of the colony *.

C HAP. XIII.

The inhabitants of Pensylvania—Method of living—New settlers—Mode of settling waste tracts—Plantations—Comparison between the husbandry of Britain and Pensylvania.

THIS country is peopled by as happy and free a fet of men as any in America. Out of trade there is not much wealth to be found, but at the same time there is very little poverty, and hardly such a thing as a beggar in the province. This is not only a consequence of the plenty of land, and the rate of labour, but also of the principles of the Quakers, who have a con-

^{*} For understanding the importance of staples well, consult Political Essays concerning the Present State of the British Empire.

fiderable share in the government of the country. It is much to the honour of this sect that they support their own poor in all countries, in a manner much more respectable than known in any other religion.

There are some country gentlemen in Pensylvania, who live on their estates in a genteel and expensive manner, but the number is but small; many are sound, who make much such a figure as gentlemen in England of three or sour hundred pounds a year, but without such a rental; for money is scarce in this country, and all the necessaries and conveniencies of life cheap, except labour. But in general the province is inhabited by small freeholders, who live upon a par with great farmers in England; and many little ones who have the necessaries of life and nothing more.

In the settled parts of the colony, there are few situations to be found that are without such a neighbourhood as would satisfy country gentlemen of small estates, or country parsons in Britain. There are, besides Philadelphia, many small towns in which are sound societies that render the country agreeable; and the country itself is scattered with gentlemen at moderate distances, who have a social intercourse with each other.

other, besides occasional parties to Philadelphia vonon silvos donas

The most considerable of the freeholders that do not however rank with gentlemen. are a fet of very fenfible, intelligent, and hospitable people, whose company, in one that is mixed, improves rather than leffens the agreeableness of it; a circumstance owing to many of them being foreigners, which even gives something of a polish to the manners when we find ourselves in the midft of a country principally inhabited by another people. The little freeholders (there are not many farmers, except near Philadelphia) are in ease and circumstances much superior to the little farmers in England.

The method of living in Pensylvania in country gentlemen's families, is nearly like that of England: the only business is to ride about the plantation now and then, to fee that the overfeers are attentive to it; all the rest of the time is filled up with entertaining themselves; country sports, in the parts of the province not fully fettled, are in great perfection; they have hunting, but their horses are unequal to those of England; shooting and fishing are much more followed, and are in greater perfection than other in

in England, though every man is allowed both to shoot and fish throughout the province, except the latter in cultivated grounds. They have partridges, pheafants, bustards, wild turkies, wild geese, ducks, and other water fowl, wood pigeons, &c. And the rivers are most of them very full of fish, especially in the back country, to which parties are made in boats with nets; in which excursions shooting is joined: the fifth they take are brought home alive in well-boats, and put into their stores: every planter has his pond at least, but generally a chain of them, on a brook, which always supplies fresh water; in these stores, as they call them, are kept the products of their river-fishing, ready at all times for the table.

Their meals are three times a day, and ferved quite in the English taste: coffee, tea, and chocolate, are of the best forts, cheap enough to be commanded in plenty by every planter, especially coffee and chocolate; sugar also is cheaper than in England; these, with good bread and good butter, give a breakfast superior to what gentlemen of small estates usually make in England. For dinner and supper they are much better supplied, as may easily be sup-

supposed, when the plenty is considered that abounds in an American plantation: game, variety of fish, venison almost every where, poultry in prodigious plenty and variety, meat of all kinds, very good, and killed on every plantation of any fize; feveral forts of fruits, in a plenty furpaffing any thing known in the best climates of Europe, fuch as melons, water-melons, and cucumbers, in the open field; apples, pears, cherries, peaches, nectarines, goofeberries, currants, strawberries, and rasberries, gathering some every month, from May till October. Their grapes, though plentiful to excess, are inferior. These are circumstances that make it neither difficult nor expensive to keep an excellent table. The wine commonly drank is Madeira, at not more than half the price of England; freight is cheaper, and there is none, or a very trifling duty. French and Spanish wines are also drank; rum is very cheap; and good beer is brewed by those who are attentive to the operation.

From hence it is sufficiently clear, that the time passed at the table need not be a barren entertainment. To this we must add reading, which fills up some hours very agreeably; great numbers of books,

including all the new publications, are imported from London at Philadelphia; befides which, that city, which has a college and a literary fociety itself, employs several printers, and fends forth news-papers every day. If to this we add, that there are many families in which music is well understood-that Philadelphia abounds with schools of all forts, and has a college—that the roads for communication are goodthe post regular-and carriers numerous; it will upon the whole be thought that gentlemen of education and ideas may, without any violence on themselves, pass their time on a plantation in Penfylvania, not only in plenty, but agreeably. It must be at once apparent, that a given income would go much further here than in Britain; this is fo strongly a truth, that an income of four or five hundred pounds a year, and a plantation, can hardly be spent without extravagance, or indulging some peculiar expence; whereas that income from an estate in Britain will hardly give a man the appearance of a gentleman.

The new settlers upon the uncultivated parts of the province, are either such as go backward to the waste country, and take

take up what land they please, paying the fixed sees to the proprietors; or such as buy uncultivated spots of other planters, who have more than they want, or chuse to sell: in this case, they make as good a bargain as they can; but the land is dearer than that which is had of the proprietors. It is remarkable to see the small tracts that men will buy with a view to support a whole family.

The progress of their work is this; they fix upon the spot where they intend to build the house, and before they begin it, get ready a field for an orchard, planting it immediately with apples chiefly, and some pears, cherries and peaches. This they fecure by an inclosure, then they plant a piece for a garden; and as foon as these works are done, they begin their house: some are -built by the countrymen without any affiftance, but these are generally very bad hovels; the common way is to agree with a carpenter and majon for fo many days work, and the countryman to ferve them as a labourer, which, with a few irons and other articles he cannot make, is the whole expence: many a house is built for less than twenty pounds. As foon as this

this work is over, which may be in a month or fix weeks, he falls to work on a field of corn, doing all the hand labour of it, and. from not yet being able to buy horses, pays a neighbour for ploughing it; perhaps he may be worth only a calf or two and a couple of young colts, bought for cheapness; and he struggles with difficulties till these are grown; but when he has horses to work, and cows that give milk and calves, he is then made, and in the road to plenty. It is furprifing with how small a fum of money they will venture upon this course of fettling; and it proves at the first mention how population must increase in a country where there are fuch means of a poor man's supporting his family; and in which, the larger the family, the easier is his undertaking.

When a settler is possessed of a tolerable sum of money, as from one hundred to two hundred pounds, or such as begin with from two to six or seven hundred, they reap equal advantages from this plenty of land and the necessaries of life, for their money goes so much farther; and they are able to live much better, and in all respects more comfortably than upon equal sums in Eu-

rope; that this is the case will be seen from the following account of a new fettlement formed on the river Scoolkuyl, between 30 and 40 miles beyond Reading near the Kittalanny mountains, in one of the most healthy and beautiful countries in the province. The tract of land was 5000 acres, which, being part of a large grant not fettled, were purchased. The person who settled here went from the West of England, his whole fortune being twelve hundred pounds: it was some years after the event that this account was taken; but though it may not be minutely accurate, yet is it sufficiently fo to explain the expences of forming a fettlement, and also the advantages of laying out such a sum of money.

Freight and expences of three persons from Bristol,	£. 57
Expences of a residence at Philadelphia for about half a year,	W 25
Purchase of 5000 acres	267
N. B. A part of it unprofitable waste.	07/1
Building a very neat house fit for a small family; the expression, such as in England, would let for 20l. a year.	96
Furniture,	1 90
Barn, stables, and other offices,	22
Two negroes	56
Wages for five years, of fix German fervants bought,	120

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 193
Brought forward, £. 733
Cloathing and expences one year, 33
Implements of husbandry 70
A boat 10
Arms, ammunition and fundries 9
A year's house-keeping and family expences 112
Live flock, 8 horses, at 41 f. 32
10 Cows, at 31 30
30 Young cattle, at 20s. 30
70 Swine 16
50 Sheep 10
Poultry
123
Cash reserved for seeding the land, orchards, ?
gardens, and incidental expences
Example - Singagament Cresonia
£. 1200
The annual expences of the family, &cc. were afterwards:
Labour, in cloathing negroes, wages paid (besides the six Germans) and la-
bourers,
House-keeping and family expences, - 60 0 0
Repairs of implements and new ones bought, 16 10 0
Expences in building and additions to fur-
niture, &c
Province taxes, &c II II o
Sundry expences 20 0 0
Charles the English of the Carles and Cook and Cook and
To which thought he saided interest of 2 155 11 0
To which should be added interest of \$ 60 0
12001. at 5 per cent, 5
Tool are at land
Total 215 11 0
of white the residence of the state of the s
Vol. I. O The

The product was extremely various, but for several years it ran nearly as follows, none being reckoned but what was sold off the plantation, the increase of cattle was all the time considerable, besides the family living off the land; the 601. for house-keeping being only for manufactures, India goods, rum, &c.

goods, ratis, ecc.	A SHARE WAS DON'T	
Esta Transfer Control of the Control	1.	s. d.
220 quarters. of wheat, -	220	00
40 quarters of Indian corn, -	14	0.0
100 qrs. of barley, peafe, and bean	is, 46	0 0
Product of cattle fold,	- 34	0.0
Fruit and cyder,	10	0 0
Sundry forts of lumber,	- 13	0 0
of lotting and an entropy of the solu-	337	00
Expences,	215	00
Neat profit £	. 122	00

Which with the 5 per cent is 182 l. which on 1200l. is 15 per cent. This appears to me to be very confiderable, for besides this amount of profit there is to be reckoned the increasing value of the estate, from buildings, fruit-trees, improvements, and the stock of cattle which on all American farms presently quadruple their numbers. What these

these articles amounted to cannot be said. but must certainly be considerable; this circumstance with that of living in fo plentiful and agreeable a manner, are the greatest advantages of this country: one point is however to be attended to, which is the ability of employing the profit made in increasing the business, hiring more fervants and breaking up more land, which would presently increase the profit con-

fiderably.

I am of opinion that 15 per cent is much exceeded by many farmers in England, upon a capital of 1200l., but they do not, besides, live in the manner of the Pensylvanian planter, who has at least the advantages in house-keeping that are enjoyed in England by a country gentleman of four hundred pounds a year: this makes a vast difference; and the British farmer lies under the disadvantage like all his brethren of not being able to increase his business: but what an amazing advantage compared with this, is the cultivated fpot being in the midst of 5000 acres all belonging to the planter, who enlarges his improvements gradually as fuits him! this can no where be had in a country that is all parcelled out into estates, except a purchase is made of a tract

tract of waste land; which is of a very different price in Britain and America.

Another account I gained of a new fettled plantation, was one on a much smaller scale. It was of 300 acres of waste.

A STATE OF THE STA					1.	s.	d.
Patent fees on the grant		•			30	0	0
Buildings,		inn	S		45	0	0
Implements,	Amer	Than		1 ×41	37	10	
Two fervants bought,	•		•	•	26	0	0
House-keeping, &c.	4		•		36	0	0
Furniture,	•		•	NO 9 (54	25	0	0
Orchard and feed,	-		•	•	13	10	0
	1.	s.	d.				Ares a
2 horfes, at 31. 10s.	7	0	0				
4 cows, at 21. 109.	10	6	6			\$50	
10 fwine, at 58	2	10	0			7527	
Poultry	0	10	. 0				
	4444	A	10.00		-20	0	
-arthrodic on a ta				des	0 0	10 80.3	32.7

The annual expences were reckoned.

Taxes and repairs,		1. s.	0
Implements, -	An on Deskins	5 40	0
Wages and cloathing,		16 0	0
Housekeeping, &c.	nautu i Si siziora		0
	Longia or si	51 10	0

The products annually fold in corn and lumber amounted to about 1271. This is very confiderable, but the planter and a fon both worked almost as hard as his fervants.

8

In

In a few years he got almost the whole grant into culture; purchased more land, had near a dozen servants, and above 200 head of cattle. Such a rise is not to be

experienced in cultivated countries.

In no territory in the world, I apprehend, can a man with two or three hundred pounds, enter into husbandry, with such a prospect of making a small fortune: in England, the sum is nothing; but where there is such a plenty of fresh land to be taken up, the case is different; a man's expences are few, he is enabled to save something every year, and every shilling he saves he can throw into an increase of culture, which is the greatest inducement to industry in the world.

My enquiries into the domestic economy of this province has brought me acquainted with another instance which I shall day before the reader. Such accounts form but very unentertaining reading for people who look for amusement alone; but I cannot help esteeming them as the only means of gaining that sort of intelligence which is truly useful. The following instance was of a person who left Scotland a few years ago in order to settle in this province.

0 3

Freight

restable to the Character Landing of the con-	1.	. 8.	d.
Freight from Glafgow to Philadelphia, -	25	0	0
Patent, fees, &c. of 1000 acres,	37	10	0
Building a house, a barn, a stable, a cow-	1		
shed, a fruit house, a cyder aparatus, a	1.06	2012	
poultry building, a hog-yard and a boat-	136	0	0
house,			-
Inclosing 86 acres with posts and planks in	1 -6		
three divisions,	} 16	0	0
Inclosing III acres with live hedge and	7	0	
bank in three divisions,	5 21	0	0
Planting an orchard of 16 acres, contain-	j. enn	DOS	
ing 16,000 apple trees, 2000 pears 3000	22	10	0
cherries and 3000 peach-trees,	J		
Expence of the garden,	H	10	0
Six negroes,	185	0	0
Cloathing and food of ditto for a year, -	22	0	0
One servant, a foreigner, bought for three	0120	4113	
years, at 41. 10s	13	10	0
Two ditto for 4 years, at 31. 5s	- 26	5	0
Cloathing a year,	14	10	0
Furniture,	36	0	0
Arms,	6	13	6
Ammunition,	2	17	0
A schooner,	15	0	0
A boat,	6	5	0
Implements of planting,	38	0	0
A year's house keeping -	- 36	0	•
deline abustical todaonis, ristras	_3°	Kiri r	
	659	5	0
Live stock.	-37	•	
10 cows, at 31 £. 30			
10 horses, 50	a Mrs		
60 sheep, 18	W. W. H		
Swine, 14	fogru	19. J	
Poultry, &c 2	n Kar		
Zouni j, cc.		•	-
Sundries	-114	0	0
	30	0	_
	(803		0
	5 003	3.3	_
	Shirt	44 4 100	
	Pro	odu	a

AMERICAN HUSBANDA	1.	-	74
Product of the first year.	2.6		
and the formation of the following formation		s.	d.
15 acres of wheat, at 2½ qrs. per acre, }	37	10	0
60 acres Indian corn, 40 bushels per acre, 2400, at 18.	120	0	•
Cattle,	15	0	0
Lumber	10		0
a elektri kalanda aya ili elektrika aya tarih katala kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir Kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir da ili elektrika kilibir da	183	. 0	0
	2 2 3 3		1 3 DE
Product of the fecond year	r.		
The American State of the State	1.	s.	d,
20 acres of wheat, 2 qrs. per acre, 40 qrs.	40	0	0
40 acres Indian corn, 30 bushels per acre, 1200 bushels, at 18. 3d.	75	0	0
at 8s 30 qrs.	12	0	0
15 acres of pease and beans, 3 qrs. per acre, }	22	10	. 0
Fruit and cyder,	10	0	0
Lumber,	15	0	0
	-	100	- Janes

Lest any persons should be missed by these accounts of produce, the first and second years, I must observe that many planters receive very little produce the first and second and some even the third years, which is owing to the ground being a thick wood: these and others, who soon make a considerable product, are such as get a tract of meadow, or rather up-land pasture in their grant, which for profit they plough O 4

£. 194 10

up immediately and fow with corn. But at the same time I should observe, that in this province the expence of clearing, even the thickest woods, is not great, it is more than repaid in good management, by the lumber which arises on the land; but for this several hands are requisite, which cannot be procured by people who fettle with only small sums of money. It is much to be regretted, that the preceding account is not more complete, particularly in the common annual expence and produce: however, it is evident from it, that the profit of the plantation was very foon confiderable.

It is worthy of remark on these accounts, that the product seems to be made by the common husbandry of the province, which is so far from being perfect. May we not conclude, that the benefit would have been much greater, had a more correet agriculture been practifed? There is the greatest reason to suppose, that a man well acquainted with the true principles of husbandry settling in this province, would be able to advance the profit of a plantation much beyond this account.

Having now laid before the reader, upon the best authority I have been able to

gain, a state of the husbandry of this province, it remains for me to compare it with that of Great Britain; which is one of the most important articles of this work, and indeed of as great consequence as any intelligence that can be laid before the reader, concerning American affairs; for, unless this comparison is well understood, it is impossible to know the principles upon which America acts on the population of Britain. To find a man equally skilled in the husbandry of both countries is hardly to be expected; but though I cannot give accounts of which I have such certainty of knowing to be accurate, in the case of Britain, as in that of Pensylvania, yet as there are some late writers concerning the English agriculture, who are acknowledged to be of undoubted authority, I shall be able, by means of their works, to draw up fuch an account of the profit of husbandry in England, as shall have no material errors in it, in order to form the contrast to that of Pensylvania. Upon these authorities, suppose a man, with a certain sum of money, to enter into hufbandry in England, with a view to make the best interest he is able of his money-I shall suppose with 1200 l.

the instance of this province. From the accounts we have of British husbandry, we are to suppose that the greatest profit is made by the culture of the best land.

Stock of a farm of 250 acres of rich land.

Rent, tythe, and parish taxes, of 250 acres 3337	s. d.
Housekeeping, &c. for one year 80	00
Eight horses for the culture of 150 acres } 120	00
Live flock for 100 acres of grafs.	
15 cows at 71 105	00
10 oxen at 5l 50	
	00
	00
300 sheep at 10s 150	
Poultry, 3	
Two men, one maid, and a boy, wages, 27	
Pay of four labourers a year, at 201 80	
Implements of husbandry and harness, - 130	00
Seed for the first crop, 40	00
Contingent expences, and cash in hand, for ?	100
advantage of markets, purchase of ma-	
Total £. 1200	00
The second of th	

The annual expences.

Office of the off	drop since	A STATE OF THE	1.	s. d.
Rent, &c.	usumi ton.		337	10 0
Housekeeping, -			60	00
Labour, -			107	00
distribution dutille	MI I Park		100	1000

Carried forward 504 10 0

	DRY. 203
ob choled fishers were the	l. s. d
Drought forw	
Repair of implements,	- 50 0
Ten oxen,	- 50 0
Sundry expences,	- 30 0
classical desirability of the second	634 10
Interest of 1200l. at five per cent.	- 60 0
To	tal £. 694 10
Annual produce.	i I dynodi
totally button ad or one poster	11 11 1. S. d
The fystem in which the arable fields	are
thrown is supposed to be,	the desiration of
1. Turneps,	mar Snord w
2. Barley or oats,	
3. Clover,	Kent, mal
4. Wheat,	Tage is
which we are told is the best husban	dry / 144 0
of Britain; upon this system the 37 ac	res In oviaw?
of corn, fown in fpring, is to be divid	ded soon wit
into 30 to fell of barley, and 7 for	the
teams of oats; 30 at 4 quarters an ac	re.
TAG american at G. La	The second of
37 acres of wheat, $3\frac{1}{2}$ quarters an acre, 1 quarters at 50s.	L. FOREIN E LOS
quarters at 50s	29 322 10
Profit of 15 cows at 51.	2000
Product of 10 oxen,	- 75 0 0
Profit on young cattle,	- 30 0
Do. on fwine,	- 35 0
Do. on sheep,	- 130 0
Hay fold,	- 20 0
Profit by poultry,	- 10 0
0	10 0
Sale of wood,	
Sale of wood,	
Sale of wood,	al £. 876 10 6
Expences as above,	al £. 876 10 0
Expences as above,	al £. 876 10 6

This profit, with the interest before deducted, is 141 l. which from 1200 l. is 20 per cent. This calculation is upon the supposition of 100 acres out 250 being grass land; supposing the whole arable, which some writers esteem the most profitable, the account may then be stated as follows: though I should premise, that not many tracts in England are to be found without grass, and landlords are tenacious of having it ploughed up.

	Administration of the	1.	s.	d:
Rent, tythe, and parish taxes, at 278.	of 250 acres }	337	10	0
Housekeeping, &c. one year,	21 21 21 20 3	80	o	0
Twelve horses at 151.		180	0	0
Live stock for 60 acres of clove grass, and 60 of turneps maintaining the 12 horses)				
5 cows at 71	Carries Sections	35	0	0
5 young cattle at 30s.	• I w to	7	10	0
200 fheep at 10 s	* v. 10 and	100	0	0
Swine, -	•	10	0	0
10 oxen for turneps,	and the same	50	.0	0
Poultry,	· Nac · meda /	3	0	0
Four men, one maid, and two	boys wages	50	0	0
Pay of five labourers at 201.		00	0	0
Implements of culture of all for	ts, - 2	150	0	0
Seed, -	N. J. Holloop W	55	,0	0
	Total L. 12	58	0	0

The annual expence.

		1. 0. 4.
Rent, &c.	•	337 10 0
Housekeeping,		100 00

Carried forward 407 10 0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. Brought forward 407 10 0 Wages and labour, 150 0 0 Repairs of implements, 80 00 Ten oxen, 0 0 Contingent expences. 40 Interest of 12581. £. 820 8 0 The annual produce. The system of this farm, like that of the former, is supposed to be, 60 acres turneps, 60 - barley, 60 — clover, 60 — wheat, 10 — grafs, 60 acres wheat, 32 qrs. per acre, 210 qrs. at 50s. 48 acres of barley, 4 grs. an acre, 192 grs. } 230 at 24 s. * Profit on 5 cows, Do. on young cattle, Do. on sheep, Do. on fwine, Do, on poultry, Sale of wood, IO Sale of 10 oxen, 100 Total, L. 1033 Expence, 820 Profit f. 213 00

Which,

^{*} The feed for the land in the next year, faved, befides these crops in both instances.

Which, with 621. 18s. interest, is 2751. 18s. and that on 12581. is about 21\frac{1}{2} per cent.

It appears from these accounts, that in England, on the best land, and with excellent husbandry, about 20 per cent. is made by employing 1200 l. on 250 acres. The circumstance of the husbandry being excellent, is not to be forgotten; for not all parts of this kingdom practise so good a system as,

- 1. Turneps,
 - 2. Barley,
 - 3. Clover,
 - 4. Wheat,

which the writers on husbandry justly enough reckon to be excellent: nor will perhaps half the kingdom admit of such a system, from being too heavy and wet to yield turneps; in which case, the profit is not to be supposed nearly to equal the turnep culture, which excludes the barren expence of a fallow: but the number of farmers, even in this enlightened age and country, that practise the above culture is very small; on the contrary they, like the planters of America, are too apt to take several crops of corn running, instead of introducing turneps and clover.

It appeared above, that the profit on 1200 l. employed on a plantation of 5000 acres in Pensylvania, in a few years after fettling it, was 15 per cent. whereas in England, that fum yields 20 or 21 per cent. But then there are other circumstances to be considered, which I am afraid will more than ballance this difference. produce from the American farm was gained by the common management of the province, which is as bad and unprofitable a system as can well be imagined; confequently it would admit of great improvements, without introducing any other crops: but the 20 per cent. in England is gained from the most capital management which common crops will admit, and on the most favourable foil that is to be found plentifully in Britain. In one case you are open to an immense improvement, in the other none can be imagined without deviating from common husbandry. Secondly, The American has the fee simple of 5000 acres into his bargain, with all the timber on it; this, however plentiful land may be, is a very different affair from renting 250. Of the same superiority, is the house and offices, orchards and gardens, made and to be enjoyed for ever, with nothing in the

opposite scale to balance them. The American lives upon his own freehold; if the Englishman would do the same, he must buy it, in which case his 250 l. a year would, at 28 years purchase, cost 7000 l. in which case his capital must be 82001. and upon 7000 l. of it he would make perhaps 21 per cent. Thirdly, and which is the most important of all, the Pensylvanian can by an annual increase of culture. expend all his favings at the fame advantage of 15 per cent. or rather at 20 or 25; for when the buildings are raised, the estate bought and stocked, additions to culture will certainly pay better interest than the original fum, out of which were fuch expences, together with freight, &c. all which may, in respect of the profit, be called barren. On the contrary, the English farmer can do nothing better than put out his profits at the common interest of five per cent. or perhaps only four; for he can very rarely increase his land as he grows rich, without leaving one farm, and moving into a larger, which is quite another affair from the gradual increase of the American. Fourtbly, Both the farmers are supposed to live partly off their farms, a fum of money being allowed in either cafe

case for buying such articles as their lands do not produce. But what an amazing difference is there between them in this respect. With the sum charged to the English farmer, he will not be able to live much better than a day-labourer—and not to live at all if he is not saving to a degree. But on the other hand, the Pensylvanian lives, in point of table and sports, to the full equal with a country gentleman in England of sour or sive hundred pounds a year; and, in several instances, far superior to one of 1000l. a year.

In all these articles, the freeholder in Penfylvania is fo much fuperior, that the comparison will scarcely bear mentioning; nor is it less in all those circumstances of convenience and agreeableness, which refult from living upon your own land-your own manor: the farmer gets a long leafe with difficulty, and at the end of it must pay perhaps more than the land is worth, or quit his farm: and during the whole leafe plagued possibly either by his landland or steward; he must not kill a hare or a partridge without being liable to a profecution—he must not — but the comparison in all these respects will not bear an idea of equality.

Vol. I.

But here it should be observed, that to gentlemen or any persons of enlarged ideas, agriculture in Britain is probably far more profitable than in the preceding sketch; for if plants not commonly cultivated are introduced on the farm, the advantage will be far more than 20 per cent. of this, carrots, potatoes, cabbages, hops, madder, &c. are instances. To give some idea of this, it will be proper to lay before the reader a calculation of this point, upon the data given by writers of husbandry that can be depended upon. I shall begin with carrots.

Expences p	er acre.	1.	s. d.
Ploughing and other t	illage,	0	15 3
Manuring,	- 10 (ii -)	I	0 3
Seed and fowing, .	es bes	0	5 9
Hand hoeing, -	gogu = ruir	I	90
Digging up,	et •11	1	10 0
Carting, clearing, &c.	Linke.viel	1	70
Rent, tythe, &c.		0	17 0
cione or granus in -terr and ya rederive	£.	7	4 3
Produ	ce.	ήl ,	o anni
560 bushels at 1s. 1d.	-	30	68
Expences,		7	4 3
	Profit £.	23	2 5 This

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 211 This a fingle crop; but the average of fe-

veral expence per acre, 61. 4 s. 5d.

	1.	S.	a.
Product,		The second	1
Profit,			5*

This is 350 per cent. but then we are fenfible that deductions must be made for general expences on the farm, which have no place here, as some labour, sences, house-

keeping, &c. &c.

In madder a gentleman has expended 2061. 14s. on 10 acres, the produce was 5401. and the profit 3331. 6s. † This is 161 per cent. With cabbages another person has made the following advantage upon an average.

Expences.

Linperies		2 12 18 18	NY 187
Rent,	1	10	0
Ploughing,	1	11	6
Planting,	0	4	6
Horse hoeing and weeding,	0	9	6
ur Areanaid, again iann an 14-15			_
Pinosa insusaina to tuesd ad	1. 2	15	6

P 2

Produce.

^{*} Course of Experimental Agriculture, Vol. II. p.

⁺ Farmer's Tour through England, Vol. II. p.

Produce.

		1.	s.	đ.
By feeding cattle,	•		16	
Expences, -	And - Western	3	15	6
	Profit L.	*13	0	10

This is 347 per cent. In all these cases, we know upon a whole farm, such crops are not in general to be gained: and that expences so reckoned would run much higher; but it is evident that the introduction of such crops would be far more profitable than common ones. Hops are found, in trials, to yield above 100 per cent. but potatoes exceed them all, yielding sometimes crops from 50l. to 100l. an acre, from an expenditure of from 20l. to 30l.

If a farm was to be cultivated in England upon the principle of cultivating crops only, which would yield such large products, in that case, the profit of husbandry would turn out over a whole farm much more than 20 per cent. probably 40 or 50 per cent. Whether Pensylvania by adopting the same improvements would equal it, is not to be

^{*} Six Months Tour, Vol. II. p. 121.

decided here, the trial never having been made, but certainly a man that could make 40 per cent. by husbandry in England, would act very imprudently to change his fituation without much stronger proofs of superior advantages elsewhere, than he can have at present.

Settling upon a plantation in this colony feems to be of superior benefit to people who can pay their freight to America, and then have money enough left to buy a small plantation, build a house, &c .- Also to those who with a sum of money from 5001. to 2000 l. would in common busbandry apply it to the greatest advantage. - Also to country gentlemen of small fortunes, to whom the extreme dearness of Britain is very burthensome-but to men who will adopt the profitable modern improvements of hufbandry, Britain is more beneficial than America.—And to fuch whose fortunes bear a proportion to the luxury of the age, England certainly is the first country in the universe. These distinctions are never to be forgotten; general affertions for or against any country are always erroneous: nothing can be plainer than the fact, that those whose incomes are too small to maintain them in England, may live in a far supe-P 3 rior

rior stile in Pensylvania, but with other classes the contrary is the case: every one must know that in order to reap advantage from this circumstance they must quit all connections in their native country; they must give up both friends and relations, and all those endearing circumstances which renders a native country fo agreeable.-They must cross an immense ocean, and fix in a new hemisphere, where the people and the climate are equally new: they must submit to a much hotter sun than that of England, and also to greater cold; and they must run the hazard of being destroyed or wounded by poisonous serpents that abound far more than in Britain: in return for these circumstances, they will enjoy the advantages specified above; great most certainly, but of value only to those whose fortunes are so small that they cannot live like their forefathers, whose money in cheaper times went fo much farther. When a man lives the ridicule and contempt of his neighbours, because his mean circumstances force him to frict frugality, he had better fly to vipers and rattle-inakes than into the company of his neighbours : and when even his penury will scarce keep him from starving, it is of little consequence to know that the

inhospitable clime he lives in is his native one: there are a thousand comforts in a competency which may make amends for the loss of such friends as poverty brings. And as to crossing an ocean, and living in another hemisphere, they are what are done by others even in wealthy situations at home; there is nothing terrible in it to people of sense.

-sided and select the contract out

toner and the second section of the state of

the particle of the continues of the con

to de liger Cie es covais biografia

totalises C. H. A. P. XIV.

asher and at mi saverante of the harlore

VIRGINIA and MARYLAND.

Climate of Virginia and Maryland—Soil— Productions—Face of the Country.

HESE two provinces lie between latitude 31½° and 40°, being in extent about 250 miles from north to fouth, and the same breadth from east to west, that is from the sea to the Alligany mountains. The parallel is the same as Morocco, Fez, the coast of Barbary, Syria, Lesser Asia, Greece, Sicily, Naples, and the southern provinces of Spain, that is perhaps, without exception, the countries of all the world that enjoy the finest climate.

That of Virginia and Maryland has its objections, but is notwithstanding fine: in summer the heats would be insupportable on the coast, were it not for the sea breezes which refresh them greatly. In the back country, among the mountains, this heat is much less violent than in the low country; for there they enjoy one of the most temperate climates in the world:

the weather is changeable, and the changes are sudden: in winter, frosts come on with very little warning, and after a warm day; and in summer the tempests of thunder and lightning are extremely violent and sudden, but do no more harm than in much more temperate climates. Their rains at certain seasons of the year are very heavy, but not of long duration, and the frosts of winter are sooner: in general, throughout the year the sky is clear, and the air is pure and wholesome.

The foil of the country varies much; all the sea coast, for above one hundred miles, is a low, flat, fandy beach, fo low, that the country is not descried from on ship-board till you are in the rivers, out of which the trees feem to rife: the low lands on the banks of them are a rich, black mould, more than a foot deep, of a fertility exceeding every thing in Penfylvania or to the northward: the higher lands are fandy, but not therefore barren or of little value; there is a moisture in it that is sufficient even for tobacco, which will do on the most luxuriant soils in the world. When you get from one hundred to one hundred and fifty miles from the coast, the country rifes, and increases in inequality for another hundred

hundred miles, till you come to the Alligany mountains. This line of country is far superior to the coast in climate, healthiness, and agreeableness, and in general the soil much exceeds it *.

The products of Virginia and Maryland differ considerably from those of Pensylvania, from their nearer neighbourhood to the sun. As to timber and wood, they have all the forts that are found upon the continent: many sorts of oaks, cedars, firs, cyprus, elm, ash, and wallnut; some

ngioneic

^{* &}quot;The whole sea coast of North America, says Dr." Mitchell, from the bay of New York to the gulph of Mexico is a low, flat, fandy beach; the foil for a great distance from it is fandy and barren, the climate is very rainy, and as thefe rains have no drains from the land, but stagnate all over a low flat country, they form innumerable swamps and marshes, which render it very unhealthful. It is a common opinion, that all this part of the continent, which stretches into the ocean at a confiderable distance from the rest, has been recovered from the sea, and that it is nothing but a drained marsh or fand bank, which indeed it very much resembles, and in nothing more than its pernicious influence on mankind. Accordingly in all this space nothing is to be found either on the surface or in the bowels of the earth, but beds of fea shells, in place of stones, metals, and other minerals, and the earth is as barren in these as in other productions." Present State, p. 184. This is in general true of the coast, but the same writer acknowledges all the merit of the back country.

of their oaks are said to measure two seet square and sixty seet in height. They have also beech, poplar, hazel, besides saffafras, sarsaparilla, and other dying woods. The unsettled country is all a forest of these trees, without underwood, and not standing so close but they may any where be rode through. Near the coast the low lands are all swamps, from which grow cedars, pines, and cypresses. This plenty of wood is of great advantage here, as in all the colonies more to the north, in affording lumber for the West Indies, which forms a considerable article in the exports of the province.

As to fruit trees, they have all those which are known to us in Europe or Pen-sylvania; particularly apples, pears, cherries, quinces, plums, grapes, peaches, and nectarines, in the same plenty as in Pensylvania, so as to be applied to the same use of feeding hogs as there. All other fruits are produced here, as may from the climate

be supposed

Besides tobacco, which is the staple of these colonies, and of which I shall speak more by-and-by, wheat and all our other kinds of grain and pulse thrive here equally, if not in a superior degree, to any of our other colonies; a circumstance in which the country resembles those in the same parallel in Europe and Africa, Sicily, Spain, and Barbary, which produce the best wheat that is known in the world; and in these articles of common husbandry the planters have increased much more than in tobacco, for reasons which I shall explain hereaster.

No part of America, or indeed of the world, boasts more plentiful or more general production of all forts of garden vegetables; and in a state of excellence that is proportioned to the heat of the climate. The same remark may also be made of their sish and sowl, having every sort that is found in Pensylvania, with others that are peculiar to the country; being in all respects of sood as plentiful as any territory in the world.

The face of the country varies in different parts of the provinces: for about one hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the sea it is generally low and flat, much spread with marshes and swamps: these in Carolina are applied to the culture of rice, but Virginia and Maryland are not hot enough for that production, which by the way is a proof how much better their cli-

mate is. This part of the country is interfected with immense rivers and bays of the fea, so as to afford a greater inland navigation than is known in any other country in the world. As the land recedes from the coast it gradually rises, until at the distance above-mentioned it begins to grow hilly, which in as many miles more ends in the Alligany mountains. this part of the provinces, the face of the country is as beautiful as can well be imagined: there are not many level tracts, and those are rich meadows, not swamps or marshes. In the vales streams of clear water are every where to be found, and even navigable rivers enter among the mountains: the hills hang to the eye in a great variety of forms, and foread with forests that give an amazing magnificence to the scenery. Spots are here frequently found, that possess every picturesque beauty which in England our nobility are fo emulous to create in their parks; and all this back country possesses a climate free from the extreme heats which oppress the inhabitants of the coast. At the same time that it enjoys fo many advantages of health and agreeableness, it is likewise fertile in an high degree, and in most parts of it capable

of producing fine crops of tobacco, to which it is in most parts applied, where navigation is at a convenient distance. From all these circumstances it is evident, that no part of our American colonies is more defirable in most respects.

CHAP. XV.

provide the property of as mark in

Description of tobacco—The culture—Remarks—Full account of a plantation.

North America, from Quebec to Carolina, and even the West Indies; but, except in Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina, they plant no more than for private use, making it an object of exportation only in these provinces, where it is of such immense consequence.

It was planted in large quantities by the Indians, when we first came to America, and its use from them brought into Europe; but what their method of culture was is now no longer known, as they plant none, but buy what they want of the English.

Tobacco is raised from the seed, which is fown in fpring upon a bed of rich mould; when about the height of four or five inches, the planter takes the opportunity of rainy weather to transplant them. The ground which is prepared to receive it, is, if it can be got, a rich black mould; fresh woodlands are best: sometimes it is so badly cleared from the stumps of trees, that they cannot give it any ploughings; but in old cultivated lands they plough it several times, and foread on it what manure they can raise. The negroes then hill it; that is, with hoes and shovels they form hillocks, which lie in the manner of Indian corn, only they are larger, and more carefully raked up: the hills are made in squares, from fix to nine feet distance, according to the land; the richer it is the further they are put afunder, as the plants grow higher, and spread proportionably. The plants in about a month are a foot high, when they prune and top them; operations, in which they feem to be very wild, and to execute them upon no rational principles; experiments are much wanting on these points, for the planters never go out of the beaten road, but do just as their

their fathers did, resembling therein the British farmers their brethren. They prune off all the bottom leaves, leaving only feven or eight on a stalk, thinking that such as they leave will be the larger, which is contrary to nature in every inflance thro'out all vegetation. In fix weeks more the tobacco is at its full growth, being then from four and a half to feven feet high : during all this time, the negroes are employed twice a week in pruning off the fuckers, clearing the hillocks from weeds, and attending to the worms, which are a great enemy to the plant; when the tobacco changes its colour, turning brown, it is ripe, and they than cut it down, and lay it close in heaps in the field to fweat one night: the next day they are carried in bunches by the negroes to a building called. the tobacco bouse, where every plant is hung, up separate to dry, which takes a month or five weeks; this house excludes the rain, but is deligned for the admission of as much air as possible. They are then laid close in heaps in the tobacco houses for a week or a fortnight to sweat again, after which it is forted and packed up in hogsheads; all the operations, after the Add to 1 7 many has will sup of Plants

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 225
plants are dried, must be done in moist or
wet weather, which prevents its crumbling
to dust.

There are among many inferior distinctions of sorts two generally attended to, Oromoke, and fiveet scented; the latter is of the finest flavour, and most valued, growing chiefly in the lower parts of Virginia, viz. on James river, and York river, and likewise on the Rappanhannock, and the south side of the Potomack: the Oromoko is principally in use on Chesepeak bay, and the back settlements on all the rivers. It is strong and hot; the principal markets for it are Germany and the North.

One of the greatest advantages attending the culture of tobacco, is the quick, easy, and certain method of sale. This was effected by the inspection law, which took place in Virginia in the year 1730, but not in Maryland till 1748. The planter, by virtue of this, may go to any place and sell his tobacco, without carrying a a sample of it along with him, and the merchant may buy it, though lying a hundred miles, or at any distance from his store, and yet be morally sure both with respect to quantity and quality. For this Vol. I.

purpose, upon all the rivers and bays of both provinces, at the distance of about twelve or fourteen miles from each other, are erected warehouses, to which all the tobacco in the country must be brought, and there lodged, before the planters can offer it to fale; and inspectors are appointed to examine all the tobacco brought in. receive fuch as is good and merchantable, condemn and burn what appears damnified or insufficient. The greatest part of the tobacco is prized, or put up into hogsheads by the planters themselves, before it is carried to the warehouses. Each hogshead, by an act of affembly, must be goolb. neat, or upwards; some of them weigh 14 cwt. and even 18 cwt. and the heavier they are the merchants like them the better; because four hogsheads, whatsoever their weight be, are esteemed a tun, and pay the same freight. The inspectors give notes of receipt for the tobacco, and the merchants take them in payment for their goods, passing current indeed over the whole colonies; a most admirable invention, which operates so greatly, that in Virginia they have no paper currency *.

^{*} Mair's Book keeping, p. 333.

The merchants generally purchase the tobacco in the country, by fending persons to open flores for them; that is, warehouses in which they lay in a great affortment of British commodities and manufactures, to thefe, as to mops, the planters refort, and fupply themselves with what they want, paying, in inspection receipts, or taking on credit according to what will be given them; and as they are in general a very luxurious fet of people, they buy too much apon credit; the confequence of which is, their getting in debt to the London merchants, who take mortgages on their plantations, ruinous enough, with the ufury of eight per cent. But this is apparently the effect of their imprudence in the suggester like other than holding min

Respecting the product of tobacco, they know very little of it themselves by the acre; as they never calculate in that manner, and not many tobacco grounds were ever measured; all their ideas run in the the proportion per working hand. Some are hired labourers, but in general they are negroe slaves; and the product, from the best information I have gained, varies from an hogshead and a half to three and an

half per head. The hogshead used to be of the value of 51. but of late years it is 81. The variation is therefore from 121, to 281. per head, according to the goodness of the lands and other circumstances. But the planters, none of them depend on tobacco alone, and this is more and more the cafe fince corn has yielded a high price, and fince their grounds have begun to be worn out. They all raise corn and provisions enough to support the family and plantation, besides exporting considerable quantities; no wheat in the world exceeds in quality that of Virginia and Maryland. Lumber they also fend largely to the West Indies. The whole culture of tobacco is over in the summer months; in the winter the negroes are employed in fawing and cutting timber, threshing corn, clearing new land, and preparing for tobacco: fo that it is plain, they make a product per head, befides that of tobacco.

Suppose each negroe makes two hogsheads of tobacco, or 161. and 41. in corn, provisions, and lumber, besides supporting the plantation, this is a moderate supposition; and if true, the planter's profit may be easily calculated: the negroe costs him

501. his cloathing, tools, and fundries, 31. in this case, the expence of the slave is only the interest of his cost, 21. 10s. and the total only makes 51. 10s. a year. To this we must add the interest of the planter's capital, province taxes, &c. which will make some addition, perhaps thirty or forty shillings per head more, there will then remain 121. 10s. a head profit to the planter; which is more than cent. per cent. profit: but this being a point of considerable importance, shall be further examined.

There is no plant in the world that requires richer land, or more manure than tobacco; it will grow on poorer foils, but not to yield crops that are sufficiently profitable to pay the expences of negroes, &c. The land they found to answer best is fresh woodlands, where many ages have formed a stratum of rich black mould. Such land will, after clearing, bear tobacco many years, without any change, prove more profitable to the planter than the power of dung can do on worse lands: this makes the tobacco planters more folicitous for new land than any other people in America, they wanting it much more. Many of them have very handsome houses, gardens.

A very confiderable track of land is not ceffary for a tobacco plantation; first, that the planter may have a fure prospect of inscreasing his culture on fresh land; secondly, that the lumber may be a winter employment for his slaves, and afford casks for

his

his crops. Thirdly, that he may be able to keep vast stocks of cattle for raising provisions in plenty, by ranging in the woods; and where the lands are not fresh, the necessity is yet greater, as they must yield much manure for replenishing the wornout fields. This want of land is such, that they reckon a planter should have 50 acres of land for every working hand; with less than this they will find themselves distressed for want of room.

But I must observe, that great improvements might be made in the culture of this crop: the attention of the planters is to keep their negroes employed on the plants and the small space that the hillocks occupy, being very apt to neglect the intervals; the expence of hoeing them is confiderable, and consequently they are apt to be remiss in this work. Here they ought to substitute the horse-hoeing management, which would cost much less, and be an hundred times more effectual. The roots of the tobacco are powerful; they spread far beyond the hillocks, which ought to convince the planters that they should feed them there by good culture, but this is little considered. A few men once got

232 AMERICIAN HUSBANDENA

into the use of a plough, they invented in the back patts of Virginia, for opening a trench in the intervals to kill weeds doofen the earth, and carry the water of halty rains off in but, from the carelessises of fervants, the scheme came to nothing, though it promised better ideas in suture, and adv

I would propose to them the use of such a machine as in Kent is applied to cultiyating the intervals of the hop-grounds, which confifts of feveral flat triangular Thares, which work near each other, being let into a beam from which it is drawn; they call it, if I miltake not da midget this would keep the tobacco intervals in a fine pulverized flate, and prepare them to be thrown against the hillock, for the nourithment of the roots, by a machine made upon the principles of that I have full menlioned, but upon an improved construction. In one of the Tours abrough England, there Is a draft of one which, with a little alseration for breadth, would do admirably for this purpose, Would the planters enter into these ideas, they would soon find their expences leffen, at the fame time that their products increased. This culture, upon the Tullian lystem, would so improve the

fai he would be able to cultivate forme-

intervals, as to prepare them for the plants in the following year, and they would not follow come to the complaint of their lands being exhausted.

Let us calculate what the culture of tobacco would cost per acre, if labour was the same price as in England; this is not difficult to do.

while as a second a good or as day	15:	8.	d.
Seed, fowing, and preparation of a feed ?	0	1	6
bed, the share of an acre, -		PA	14
Three ploughings of the plantation,	0	3	6
Harrowing, and the standard rolldy	0	0	6
Measuring out the spaces for the hillocks, ?		1.2	UD.
and marking them by fetting up flicks,	0	I	22
			12
Hilling with hoes and thovels,	0	-	4
Planting, and i consider add for all column	9	JU	3
Topping and pruning the plants at a plant, at ?		12.0	-
ofixfeetafunder, there are 12 10 upon an acre, f	had	50	de,
Pruning ten times more, at 38. 6d. an acre,	1	15	0
Worming ten times, at 28.		0	
Hoeing the hillocks four times during the ?	17/1	101	IX.
	0	6	0
featons at 18,661 1sell to said aring	11.1	N. P.	
Hoeing the intervals, suppose once, -	0	5	0
Cutting down, and laying into heaps, -	0	2	
Carrying to tobacco-house, and hanging up,	0	8	10
Taking down, and laying in heaps, -	0	2	6
Soring III & All V. To III W	0	2	6
Packing in hogheads, ow de land	K	14	6
Adorang art no Binesare!		3	
Far Pollen Would the planters enter	(A)	37.8	-
	0	·I	8
THE PARTY OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF TH	A 5 5 4	Carlo Carlo	All and the last

Suppose a man earns, on an average 1s. 4d. a day, the year round, it amounts in a year to 201. 16s. At 61. is. 8d. an acre, therefore he would be able to cultivate something

thing better than 3 4. The fame proportion probably holds for the negroes, for as their annual expence is only 7 or 81. a year, the separate charges per acre would be proportioned, and the quantity of land to be managed by one hand the same: this calculation is upon supposition that the ground is fresh, and requires no manure; if that is to be carried on, the account would be different; and perhaps three acres would prove the quantity. The product we found, was from one hoghead and half to three, and an half per working hand, or from 12 to 281. The average is about two hhds. or 161. which divided by three, the number of acres, gives the produce per acre of 51. 6s. 8d. when tobacco is at 81, a hird, according to the rate of labour in the dear parts of England, it costs more than this in mere labour to cultivate, which shews, if any thing can shew it, how much cheaper the labour of negroes is being certainly as about three to one. sinsbird.

Having ascertained these points as nearly as I am able, I shall in the next place calculate the settling a tobacco plantation. I am forry I cannot give a real account, but though I applied to many for it, it is what I could not procure; from the similar ac-

poids

counts

AMERICAN HUSBANDRYA 235
counts before given in other colonies, I
shall be able to come near the truth. It
shall suppose the planter to go from Eng-
year, the teparate charges ramnof nies ball
Freight and expences of two perions from through and London and and bottom and and before a state of two others.
cachation is upon tuppolition that the
Two ditto women delibert Date - dieli at Datoog
ifthat is to be catried on the realismont
An overfeer Patent fees and expences on taking up 2000 acres, 40 House, 100
Offices and tobacco-house, podi-void from 100 s. Furniture, Implements of culture, o most care bound aw 560
Furniture, the dependence of the bound of th
A doop and canoe, the de be a send of 50d
A floop and canoe, the first second of 50 d. Arms, ammunition, and fundries, 10 Expences of negroes, 60
Extra expenses con ditto. I ou sebeld out the
House-keeping and family expences.
Houle fervants wages, Live Rock; 10 horfes, at 41.30 - 10 £.40 100 2000
is at 81. a 951d, according to swoodle of la-
of twing cattle, of the spring control of the state of the spring control of the state of the spring control of the spring control of the state of t
37103 Haof wine Lt 10 21 Ld JED 25 L LL 1090
more than 25 is in more laboque outrivate,
was the wear of any thing can flew it, how
Expences om orchard and garden, di requede de zon
beneg certainly as about three configuration.
offering afcertained these points as nearly
as karon ables I had, in the next place cal-
calage the fettling a tobacco plantation. if c
Their first year's work is clearing some ground and the garden and orchard; after that the getting lumber and the negroes spare time from the crop, will clear land as fast as it is wanted.
The 1

nually lay out in percet and other la-
Province taxes, meilt to elu sam or zoloodo
Expence of negroes, side box vin 60 000 Repairs of implements,
House keeping, &c. 0 3751 of 79 torn of 60 30 00
Building and furniture of to anomable [129] 0.40 Overleer, 30 0 0
House fervants wares, Jistal Danie and 20180 Do
Incidents control his negroes care
henegro (which is much more than truth
Interest of 22001. anomo as many house forwo
charges cafts him &l. a year, the produce
charges outs him 81. a year, the produce
would not resubord launnAbut the profit
would be summente, and foon accumulate
44 hogheads of tobacco, at 81: 352 0 0
Product of cattle, at it hard- radio adonto o
Are rarely made by tobacco planters, and
cho oge much more common to fee their
Angrestest out by mortgages; begonage.
provegenothing it deferves, however, a
'Add the interest before charged, and said 199 900
o These space planters live more like
country gentlemen of fortune than any o-
which afrom 4885 lainistures per agent thut
house keeping 60 lamight he sadded assait
is expended in products extra from the
plantation of The receipt would then be
345.h and the interest Asipsicant and be
175h is the sum other planter might an-
nually

nually lay out in negroes and other labour: here lies his great advantages, if he chooses to make use of them; for having land plenty, and able at any time to get more, the money he lays out in labour and the small additions of tools, etc. is expended at compound interest, at the rate he makes per cent. by his negroes. Suppose the negro (which is much more than truth with good management) and attendant charges costs him 81. a year, the produce is 201. and all other contingent charges would not reduce it so far but the profit would be immense, and soon accumulate into considerable fortunes of more discountable into considerable fortunes of the more discountable into considerable into considerable fortunes of the more discountable into considerable into considerable into considerable into

On the other hand it is faid, fortunes are rarely made by tobacco planters, and that it is much more common to fee their estates eat out by mortgages; but this proves nothing; it deserves, however, a due examination.

The tobacco planters live more like country gentlemen of fortune than any other fettlers in America; all of them are spread about the country, their labour being mostly by slaves, who are left to overfeers; and the masters live in a state of emulation with one another in buildings, (many of their houses would make no slight sigure

in the English counties) furniture, wines, dress, diversions, &c. and this to fuchoa degree, that it is rather amazing they Thould be able to go on with their plantations at all, than they should not make additions to them: fuch a country life as they lead, in the midst of a profusion of rural sports and diversions, with little to do themselves, and in a climate that seems to create rather than check pleasure, must almost naturally have a strong effect in bringing them to be just such planters, as foxhunters in England make farmers. To live within compass, and to lay out their favings in an annual addition to their culture requires in the conduct a fixed and fettled economy, and a firm determination not to depart from it, at least till a handsome fortune was made. This would not be long, as a flight calculation will shew.

		Ser.					
-		F	:_1		-6	incre	-1-
	. MO. T. / TO	5535	HILL	vear	OI	mere	alc.
A		400	4.40	25.20	- 2.2.64	ALC: Lake A	THE RESERVE

Saving of the last, -	सेवतान्त्री किर्मास्त्र विच्याच्या
erica; all of them are	ther tettlers in Am
Four negroes at 501.	103-11-100 200 00
Implements,	10 00
Expences on negroes,	1104 (1 1192 00
Addition to buildings,	of a - 1 on - has 20 0.0
Sundries, -	of Phis gross at sole
0.0 48 0.0	हिन्द हैं अर्थ स्वापित्र
maintenance of the state of the	£. 250 0 0
Corried ages (St. o. o.	Pro-

AMBRICAN HUSBANDRIVA 239

Produce 201. a head, continuo dillo erfons. &c. Jan gring, gnival laving	1. s. d.
Annual faving, and think against senons	\$75 m 00ma
that it is rather amazings they	(अग्रम्युक्ति
dile to go on with their plantage.	255000
all, than they thould not make	from at
Second year.	andithha
이 사람들은 하는 하면 하는 물리가 하면 하면 하게 되었다면 그 것이다. 그 사람들이 아이를 하는 것은 것은 사람들이 살아가 내려왔다.	
Implements 1	300 00
Negroe expences, amount of the land	30 0 8
	00 0101
Jather than check plofurge unid	
the state of the s	360 00
Produce 10 at 201.	
Annual laving.	175 0 0
Is in Langland make farmers. 19	
Herparals, and to key out the	375 99.0
an anomal addition to their cold	
o o pot Third year.	Cleaning inc
가게 되면 하다가 하는데 얼마나 아내는 이 아이를 하는데	lating or exp
Eight megroes at 501. a bea temo 2009	400 1900
Expences on 18, at 31. Implements bought, and additional repairs, Bundries	54 0 0
Rindriga:	100K 400 0
ong, as a fight calculaticgribling	10 00
Dia comminate man e se dan	1 20, 300
. f .	510 0 9
Fifth year of mercale 650 - 2	And Louisia
Annual faving,	360 8 6
July 2	175 000
L.	535 0 0
M ar you.	organistant
TC9V OTRIC	Excences o
o o os Fourth year organ n	- Augustion to
Ten negroes at 501	500 00
Expences, &c. 28 at 31.	84 0 0
2 0 050 .7	-0.
Carried over	584 0 0

.bsd.					1.	s.	d.
0 0 00		Bro	ught o	ver	584	0	
Implements,	•	• •		- C-3	40	. 0	
Building, -		• •	•		30		
Sundries, -	the mater	100	as also to		20	-8.10 BU	100
Clearing land,		•	•		26	0	0
	7157	heop	58	£.	600	0	0
0 0 000		4		214		III X	AC.
Produce 28 201.		-	-		560	0	0
Annual faving,	•		· •		175	0	
0.0.01				-		_	-
a o on 3				F.	735	0	-
- 175 60	Fifth	year	103	28.0 18.0		abo Gu	
2000 acres more lan	d pater	it fees,		•	40	0	0
Another everleer,					40		
Buildings, -	•	-	•		50	0	
Clearing land,	.TEST	buid	1.		100		
Implements,	•	•			50		
Sundries, -			+08.0	1.0875	30		
8 negroes at 501. Expences on them,		- 11	8-18-6	(Fig	400	400	
Allow the planter,	Listavali		s page	194	102		
		•			40		
0000		` `		I.	860	0	
00000				Υ.	000		_
Produce 34 at 201.		-			680	0	0
Annual faving,	•		. 15:		175		
00 741 -					1	1	-
0 0 7 7 7				F.	855	0	0
	Sixth	year					
	1257	Milli	51				
Overseer,	•	•	•		40	0	
Clearing land,	•	•	. 13		50	0	0
Implements,	2	•	1 0 h		50	0	0
e o last, tere ha	20	Carri	ed forw	ard	140	0	•

AMERICAN HUSBAND	RY.	241
A A At a standard as a rest of second	1.	s., d.
Carried forward	140	00
Sundries	40	00
15 negroes at 501.	750	ALL MANAGED STREET
Expences, &c. 40, at 21.	147	0 0
Allow the planter,	28	00
martice begin as a recopdanticem	-941-9	10-7 0
Artino she annual (al bergelo	1095	00
Produce 49 at 201.	980	00
Annual faving,	190	00
G 0 301	1970 27	HOME TO
f. -	1170	00
word at the line is the second	1111	
Seventh year.		on not
	ion	
Account of the whole plantat	ion.	nna.
Province taxes,	40	00
	216	
	50	
Housekeeping,	N. S. S. G. St. St. St. St. St. St. St. St. St. St	00
	50	THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF THE
Qvericers,		0.0
House servants,		00
Incidents,		1000
Intereft	94	5 0
OCO TOP ACT OF STREET BY STATE OF WHICH	3200	5.0
is not necessitation recipied the	910	5.0
6 B 538 1	- and	00.4
Produce.	46.4	4
72 negroes at 20 l.		0.0
Oattle,	150	00
Fruit and fundries,	50	0 0
	1640	00
Expences,	910	50
Remains, f.	-720	15.0
richianis,	129	(Disks E)

Hence it appears, that he can either continue the increase of culture, with a view Vol. I. R to

to grow rich as soon as possible; or he may stop, and at the same time that he spends 300l. a year in manufactures, and foreign luxuries, may lay up 729l. 15s. a year: or else he may here begin a a second system of increase; taking the annual sum of 729l. for the soundation in the manner before explained, which would soon accumulate

into a great income.

To all accounts of that fort, there may be many objections made, in all countries, and in all branches of culture - and it would be the same if the account had been actually realized by a planter; but flight variations should not be attended to: and the greatness of this profit will admit of deductions, according to more accurate ideas, and yet the remainder be far more than sufficient to prove that the poverty of the planters is not necessary to their condition, but merely owing to their extravagant way of living. In most articles of life, a great Virginia planter makes a greater show, and lives more luxuriously than a country gentleman in England, on an estate of three or four thousand pounds a year. The great object I labour to prove, is, that this branch of agriculture, under its prefent circumstances, of price of negroes, and

and price of product, is fuch as will admit of great profit-to the capability of making a confiderable fortune; and this advantage to be gained while the planter shall live in the midst of all the conveniencies of life,

and most of its agreeableness!

I must own I am very folicitous to have this point well understood, for upon it much of this country's interest depends. Tobacco is one of the most valuable commodities that is produced by our colonies. perhaps the most so; and therefore the great advantages of felling in these parts should be well known. Settlers are always going to America, but those who go to the north of these provinces can raise no commodities that are of consequence to Britain: all the corn and provisions that the West Indies wants, can be more than raised in the tracts from New York to Florida; and lumber is had in plenty in the fouthern ones, as well as in the northern; new fettlers, therefore, going to colonies that have not a staple, is going where they can be of little use to Britain, and their making a choice fo disadvantageous to the mothercountry, can only arise from a want of knowledge of the real state and improvements of the tobacco colonies; fince in the

back parts of these they will find that healthy and agreeable country which attracts them in Pensylvania; as to the more fouthern colonies we are not to expect many to go to them, because the heat is too great to be agreeable to British constitutions. Since, therefore, tobacco culture is that which fuits the central country, which is free from the intense cold of the northern colonies, and the oppreffive heats of the fouthern ones, and at the fame time is in possession of a staple highly valuable to Britain, and profitable to cultivate, they are necessarily the country which should be fo well known as to induce fettlers to make it their choice. The poverty of the planters here, many of them at least, is much talked off, and from thence there has arisen a notion that their husbandry is not profitable: this false idea I have endeavoured to obviate, and to shew that the cause of it has little or no reference to their culture, but to the general luxury, and extravagant way of living which obtains among the planters—a circumstance which ought rather to occasion a contrary conclusion; -a supposition that their agriculture was very valuable; for men without fome rich article of product cannot afford,

even with the affistance of credit, to live in such a manner: it must be upon the face of it a profitable culture, that will support such luxury, and pay eight per cent. interest on their debts. What common culture in Europe will do this?

The observation I made on settlements in Penfylvania, are applicable in the prefeat instance. It is not so much the profit which the farmer makes on his land, as the ability he has of extending his culture, in proportion to the money he makes. This cannot be done in Britain, nor in any cultivated country, but is the glory of America. If a man makes twenty per cent. on his agriculture in England, and lays by 500 l. a year; he can get only four or five per cent. for that faving of 500 l. he cannot lay it out in an increase of culture. But let him do the same in America, and he is able every year to increase his husbandry in whatever proportion his money will allow: this is making compound interest of his favings, and will, under a thousand disadvantages, accumulate presently into a considerable fortune, in comparison with the fum the planter first began with. is a point which should never be forgotten, and in which consists the great superiority R 3 of

of America. It is not sufficiently considered by those who decry the profit of the Virginia planters, because they are not rich. They enjoy advantages which would make any set of men rich; but if instead of applying their money to making use of those advantages, he spends it in temporal enjoyments of living, dress, and equipage, he, nor the by-stander cannot, with any degree of propriety, charge that to the agriculture of the province, which is in fact owing to the private expences of individuals.

Before I quit these observations on this part of the husbandry of Virginia and Maryland, I should remark, that to make a due profit on tobacco, a man should be able to begin with twenty flaves at least; because so many will pay for an overseer: none, or at least very few, can be kept without an overseer, and if fewer than twenty be the number, the expence of the overfeer will be too high; for they are feldom to be gained under 25 l. a year, and generally from 30 to 501. But it does not follow from hence, that fettlers are precluded from these colonies, who cannot buy twenty negroes; every day's experience tells us the contrary of this; the only differ-

difference is, that they begin in small; and either have no flaves at all, or no more than what they will submit to take care of themselves; in this case, they may begin with only one or two, and make a profit proportioned to that of the greater number, without the expence of an overfeer. This is exactly fimilar to the conduct of English husbandry; a great farmer will employ a bailiff at the expence of 40 or 60l. a year; but this is far enough from preventing others from farming, who occupy no more than they can cultivate with their own hands, or with the affistance of only one man. Settlers of all kinds fix in these colonies, with advantages as great, if not greater, than any The culture of corn and other others. provisions, is as profitable here as any where else; and plantations are every day left by tobacco-planters, who quit and fell them at low prices, in order to retire backwards for fresh land, to cultivate tobacco to advantage; besides which, the new country is to be had here, equally with any other province, and upon terms as advantageous.

It is no flight benefit to be able to mix tobacco-planting with common husbandry';

this is as easily done as can be wished, and is indeed the practice of the greatest planters. A man may be a farmer for corn and provisions, and yet employ a few hands on tobacco, according as his land or manure will allow him. This makes a small business very profitable, and at the same time easy to be attained, nor is any thing more common throughout both Maryland and Virginia.

ruoris eradios galinovisis, cooreadoveros cins

can estimate medically over hands, or with the case of with a barrier man, who with a large sealous forms over the common sealous by the common sealous forms.

others, and the district resident and resident provinces provinces as many after the element of the control of

triangle spice and construction and said contrast

CHAP. XVI.

forty selectors and a second reproduction and

Observations on the waste lands of Great Britain—Not applicable to the same profit as those of Virginia—Reasons—Are superior in the bands of their owners—Remarks.

T AM fensible that an objection may be L made to the preceding recommendations of fettling in Virginia, &c. upon the principles of the superior, or at least equal advantages of fettling on the waste lands of Britain; the great benefit of the American wastes is the capability of enlarging the husbandry at pleasure proportioned to the money which the farmer has annually to lay out: agriculture in the cultivated parts of Britain has nothing equal to this advantage, but the identical circumstance is to be found in the moors and other wastes of Britain; this therefore is a case in direct opposition to that of the colonies, and confequently deferves examination here.

In the plantations every man, however low his condition and rank in life, can obtain on demand, and paying the fettled fees.

fees, whatever land he pleases, provided he engages to fettle on it in ten years a certain number of white persons; and when he has got his grant, it is a freehold io him and his posterity for ever. In this circumstance nothing can be more different, or in more direct opposition than the two cases. The wastes in Britain are all private property, generally belonging to men of fortune, who, so far from being ready to make presents of them to whoever demands them, will scarce be prevailed on to let them on long leafes: but suppose they gave leases at a trifling rent, they would not build and enclose them, and that is too great an expence here for a new fettler, who could build a handsome house in Virginia for less than a beggarly cottage would coft in England. Thus therefore there are many effential reasons for mens preferring the wilds of America to the wastes of Britain, in relation to the state of the land; and the ease and plenty of living makes another object highly advantageous in Virginia, but by no means fo in Britain.

The pleasures of being a land owner are fo great, and in America the real advantages so numerous, that it is not to be wondered

wondered at, that men are so eager to enjoy, that they cross the Atlantic ocean in order to possess them; nor is it judicious to draw comparisons between our British wastes and these, between which there is no analogy in those essential circumstances that are the soundation of the great population of America; and at the same time that this is the case with our waste lands, it is the same with our cultivated ones which are equally different.

It is true that many of the good farmers in Britain will make more per cent. for their money than is done in America; but this fingly is not the enquiry: in all the articles of living while the money is made, the state of the farmer and planter is very different: the one lives penuriously and with difficulty, the other on comparison riots in plenty; the poorest villager in fome of our colonies lives better than a farmer of 200 l. a year in Britain, that is frugal enough to fave money. Besides this what a difference there is between living in one case on their own freehold, and in the other on the grounds of a landlord! But the great point is the advantageous disposition of the savings or other money which a Virginia planter can apply annually

ally to an increase of culture; this is a point deserving the highest attention.

At the fame time that I have been fo clear in stating the superiority of Virginia in these cases, I must form an exception which is that of the landlords farming their own wastes in Britain: in this case they enter at once into most of the advantages of America, and with a power of making yet greater profit; for they may improve them in any quantities, and by building farm-houses, let them in farms very soon after the breaking up, in which rotation they will make a profit of many more per cent. than is commonly made any where in America; especially if he proceeds in the work of improvement upon the plan of taking in land enough to form a farm every year, and to let one every year. In this manner from 31471. capital, 62,0661. may be made in eleven years on moors *. From 95581. capital, 142,2941. may be made in eight years +. From 17811. the lowest sum that can be thus employed, 12,000l. may be made in fifteen years ‡. This writer feems to think fuch a work might be as well executed by a renter as

^{*} So stated in the Farm. Lett. Vol. II. p. 189.
1 P. 224.
1 P. 263.

by a landlord: but this does not by any means appear; for the latter I think the reasoning clear, but not for the former, since difficulties may be found at setting out, in procuring the land; it is not every landlord would let his wastes on long leases, at rents low enough. Other sorts of wastes are calculated in the same book to yield an equal and superior profit.

This immense profit to be made by improving British wastes turns on the very circumstance which makes husbandry so advantageous in America; the plenty of land enabling the farmer to extend himfelf annually: this is the great object that will be found uniformly profitable through every part of the world; and as wastes in Britain are plentiful enough, there is no reason for general affertions, that land is plentiful in America but dear in Britain, fince it is plain this is applicable only to those who want to buy or hire, but to those who are already the possessors, many have in Britain as much as they could have in America, and far more than they know what to do with.

Before I conclude this chapter I shall remark, that the quick population of the American wastes, and the desolate state of

the British ones, form a contrast which deferve attention in the legislature of this island: I have shewn that the reason of one country peopling and improving fo quick, and the other being quite at a stand, is lands being given away in America, or next to it, and not to be had at all in Britain; for very few will be induced to fell land absolutely waste, the price it brings being too small, and vanity of possessing many acres (however wild) great in every one. Thus there being plenty of land in Britain as wafte as that of America, is no object, unless those who are defirous of possessing it in the latter country could get it equally eafily in the former one.

But as the improvement of the wastes of a kingdom is ever an object of the high-est consequence, particularly to population, the legislature might easily devise a method if not to cure the whole evil, at least to do much good: and this would be to appoint an office to buy up all the waste land that accidentally came to market in the three kingdoms, and to settle large families on little farms in them, giving them as free-holds for ever, with a reservation of a quit-rent; not sufficient to pay the interest of

the purchase, but to lessen the expence if it was too great-but as long as it was kept moderate, no quit-rent at all should be taken, fince the object of peopling great tracts of waste land, in the heart of a country, is of much more consequence than any moderate fum would be. out some plan of this fort being executed, we may be certain the moors and wastes will never be improved, and confequently our political writers should cease declaiming on the impropriety of peopling American waftes; instead of British ones; the one can be done, the other cannot; and therefore if the peopling America is an advantage to this kingdom, as it certainly is, it ought, beyond a doubt, to be promored, notwithstrnding the inability of peopling our own wastes. Satistics, for decreos, sintens, "co-

table 1 realf objects once

CHAP.

All are usel

Pinched I, recobing Leads, aires en la Maria de la Maria del Maria de la Maria del Maria de la Maria del Maria del Maria de la Maria de la Maria del Maria d

o great -- let at long as it was kept

DARK Prest

C H A P. XVII.

the purchase, but to leften the expense if

Exports of Virginia and Maryland—Observations—General busbandry—Defects— Improvements proposed.

To shew the vast importance of these colonies to Great Britain, it will be necessary to lay before the reader the last accounts of their exports, from which we shall also see what proportion their common husbandry bears to their tobacco.

Tobacco, 96,000 hogfheads, at 81.	768,000
Indian corn, beans, peafe, &c	30,000
Wheat, 40,000 quarters, at 20s	40,000
Deer and other fkins,	25,000
Iron in bars and pigs, solla - 1110 - 100 9	35,000
Saffafras, fnake-root, ginfeng, &c	7,000
Masts, plank, staves, turpentine, and tar, -	55,000
Flax-feed, 7000 hogsheads, at 40s.	14,000
Pickled pork, beef, hams, and bacon,	15,000
Ships built for fale, 30 at 1000l.	30,000
Hemp 1000 tons at 211. (befides 4000 tons)	
more and 2000 of flax worked up for their own use,	21,000

Total 1,040,000

Upon this table I must observe once more, how extremely important these colonies

lonies are to the mother country. To raise above a million sterling, the greatest part of which are true staples, and the rest necessary for the West Indies, with no fish. whalebone, oil, &c. commodities which some of the colonies have run away with from Britain, by rivalling her in her fishery-possessing no manufactures, even to fuch a degree that all attempts to bring the people into towns have proved vain. By manufactures, I mean those for sale; for as to private families working wool, hemp, and flax for their own use, it is what many do all over America, and are necessitated to do, for want of money and commodities to buy them. A colony fo truly important, I fay, deserves every attention from the mother country, and every encouragement to induce fettlers to fix in it.

But in this lift of exports one article appears which demands particular attention, I mean hemp. To the north of these colonies, none is exported; on the contrary, they import from Britain the hemp which we import from Russia, which is brought from the Ukraine, paying this immense freight; a proof strong enough that they cannot raise it. In Virginia and Maryland Vol. I.

the foil is much better than to the northward, and will yield it, which we find it does in large quantities, even to the amount of 100,000l, an amount that is near a feventh of their tobacco, besides flax. This is the commodity of all others which we most want from our colonies, for it is fo necessary for our navy, that we ought certainly to have it more within our own command than it is at present; and the purchase carries away immense sums of money annually: to raise it therefore in America, and purchase it with our manufactures, is an object of the greatest importance. It is evident that if we are to expect hemp, it must be from this part of that continent; and consequently here we should give our great attention. It is also a matter of great importance to fettlers, to know that the climate and foil of the country will do for so valuable a product as hemp as well as tobacco; and their management is fuch, that both may be cultivated to advantage on the same plantation; and it is well known, that in America the profit on hemp, when land is found that will produce it, is as great as that on tobacco.

The

The latter plant thrives best on a rich, deep, black mould that is dry, and upland: but hemp loves the same soil in low lands, that have a good degree of moisture in them. Very many tracts of land are yet to be had in the back parts of Virginia, which contain both sorts in plenty, and would consequently do well for the cultivation of both these products. A situation for hemp requires water-carriage as well as tobacco, being a bulky commodity.

			1.	8.	d.
Hemp per ton, -		- 12 · 12	21	0	. 0
Tobacco,	Bear .	自然實施	16	0	0
Wheat, at 30s. a quarter,	Lare L.			10	0
Indian corn, barley, peafe, 16s. a quarter,	beans,	&c. at	} 4	8	0
Indigo, at 2s. 6d. alb.	A	1.	280	. 0	0
Ditto at 58.		•	560	0	0
Silk, at 20s. a lb.		9.039(1)	2240	0	0
Wine, -		-	20	0	0

Such a scale of value per ton should always be attended to by new settlers: from hence it is apparent, that indigo may be cultivated without water-carriage; or at least will bear a considerable land-carriage to get at water, because the expence of moving it will bear very little proportion to the value: but the Indian corn, pease, &c. being worth but 41. 8s. a ton, the carriage must necessarily be that of water alone, as the value is too small to bear an expensive

S 2

car

carriage: even wheat is in the same predicament; at 30s. a quarter I should not suppose it would ever bear a land-carriage of above ten or twelve miles in order to get at water. Hemp and tobacco will pay it much better, and will allow of being brought much farther by land. The writers on American affairs have, respecting navigations, confined themselves to the circumstance of the bulkiness of hemp and tobacco; but the value per ton is the only object that deserves attention; and we find that upon comparison with any fort of corn, hemp and tobacco is of a value that will bear some carriage, though not a very long one. In Virginia the planters are many of them able to ship their tobacco at their doors: this great advantage, which is of equal importance in all other productions as well as tobacco, in filk, indigo, &c. it is the same; this advantage has made it supposed a necessity; but there are many plantations in which they think a navigable river for floops and boats, of great importance to them; and not a few have not even this.

The culture of hemp in several circumstances of expence and produce has a refemblance with tobacco. In the richest soils

foils of England it takes from three and a half to four acres and a half to produce a ton, which is worth from 281. to 351. And the labour upon an acre amounts to from 31. 10s. to 51. This is less than what I supposed tobacco would cost in England; consequently we may determine that hemp is cultivated in Virginia by negroes at an expence something less per acre than tobacco. One negroe manages three acres of tobacco, and would therefore do the fame or better in hemp, which, to produce the same as in England, would be near a ton, or 211. the price in America; this exceeds tobacco. That this calculation does not exceed the truth we may find by an expression of Dr. Mitchell's, speaking of the lands on the Ohio and Mississippi, "Every labourer," fays he, " might cultivate Two ACRES or more in hemp, and one or Two in indigo, the produce of which would be worth from 30 to 40l. a year*. Now if they could manage two in hemp, and one or two in indigo, we may fairly conclude they might cultivate three in hemp: and this makes hemp more profitable to the

^{*} Present State, p. 248.

planter than tobacco: but supposing them only on a par, it is an object of no flight importance to know, that those lands which are not perfectly adapted to tobacco, may be made equally profitable under hemp.

The wheat and other corn which is among these exports, are raised principally on old tobacco plantations that are worn out for that plant without the affistance of much manure. This is a point which deserves attention: exhaust the lands in these colonies as much as you will with tobacco, you will leave it in order for grain, which is a matter of great confequence to the fettlers; fince corn is there a very profitable article of culture, and upon the rich lands of this country will (even after tobacco) yield large crops, with very little affistance from manure.

The usual course of the business has been the planters exhausting the land first with tobacco, and then retiring backwards with their negroes in quest of fresh land for tobacco, fell their old plantations to new comers, who have not money enough to go largely into tobacco with negroes, and therefore confine themselves to common husbandry: and this is upon the whole very advantageous. Planters who meet

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 263 with very rich fresh woodland, employ themselves so eagerly on tobacco, as scarcely to raise corn enough for their families, in which case their little neighbours are very useful to them in selling it. This does not however seem to be good management, as tobacco employs the negroes only in summer: indeed they may occupy the

winter entirely in clearing fresh land.

Tobacco and hemp, I have already given as good an account of as my intelligence will allow: but the common husbandry of these provinces demands the same attention. Wheat they fow as we do in England in October; about two bushels to an acre, which produces feldom less than twenty-five; fometimes thirty-five and for-Rye they do not cultivate much, as tv. their lands are in general good enough to give them great crops of wheat. Barley produces from twenty-five to forty bushels: oats from 30 to 60: pease from 10 to 60: Indian corn feldom less than 50, and sometimes 80. Turneps and cabbages thrive in the greatest luxuriance, and produce crops far beyond any thing we know in Britain. Potatoes also, with good management, yield without any dung, crops much greater than can in these islands be S 4 gained gained by the force of manuring: yet are the farmers of these colonies most inexcusably negligent in not giving these crops due justice, in properly preparing their land, and keeping them during their growth free from weeds. If the fertility of the foil and climate was well feconded by the knowledge and industry of the planters, the crops would be much greater than they are, and husbandry would prove the most profitable business in the known world. But the planters, who have the power of being good cultivators of their fields, abandon them to the overfeers of their negroes, and purfue only their own pleasures-and others, who may have more knowledge, have not the substance to make improvements: it is the same in Britain, and probably in every other part of the world. The foregoing account of the products of the crops of common husbandry, is sufficient to shew the immense profit which might be made by agriculture in this country, if it was followed with understanding and spirit: for want of these necessary ingredients, twice the land is run over to produce that which half of it would be more than fufficient for, under scientific management.

In the systems of crops generally purfued here, the farmers go upon the bad ideas of their brethren to the northwards; they take successive crops of corn, till the land will produce no more, then they leave it fallow for some years, and serve fresh ground in the same manner: all the inconveniences which I have mentioned in preceding articles refult from this, but the plenty of land feduces the planters to act thus contrary to their own interests. The fummers in Virginia and Maryland being hotter than in Pensylvania, this method must be still worse than there, because the land they leave in this manner fallow must be the longer before it acquires a turf to support cattle: this shews the necessity, if the farmer would make the most of his grounds, of leaving the land in tolerable heart; and with the last crop of corn fowing grass seeds that are adapted to the climate. Good meadows are very scarce, except where water can be thrown over them. a husbandry not practifed near so much as it ought.

In the management of their woods, they have shewn the same inattention to suturity with their neighbours; so that in the old settled parts of the provinces, they be-

gin to fear a want of that useful commodity, and would have felt it long ago, had they not such an immense inland navigation to supply them. The woods, upon a tobacco plantation, must be in great plenty, for the winter employment of the slaves, or else the planter's profit will not equal that of his neighbours.

Their fences are extremely incomplete, and kept in very bad order: all their attention is to secure the tobacco-field, but the rest of the plantation is never in this respect kept in the order that it ought to be: this is another evil occasioned by plenty of land; they will grasp at more than they have money to cultivate, even upon the tobacco system, which requires plenty; and then they are forced to manage it in a slovenly manner.

Cattle might be made an article of great profit in these provinces: the planters are obliged, on account of manure, to keep great stock; but they are little attentive to make the most advantage of them, either in the raising manure, or in the management of the beasts themselves. The breed they think little of improving; and their treatment of their horses and oxen, for draft, is such as would move the ridicule

of the smallest farmers in England. These are points which they mistakenly think of little importance, giving all their attention to the tobacco; but with better management these objects would prove so prositable as to shew that they demanded no less conduct than their principal crop. In the article of raising manure, particularly, they might make five times their present quantity, which would be attended with a corresponding increase of their staple in some of their fields; but for want of knowledge in this essential part-of their business they lose much.

There are some improvements in the rural occonomy of these provinces, which demand particular attention, for they would admit of more and greater, than any of our other plantations. Under the article to-bacco, I remarked several alterations which would render that culture much more beneficial; of which the effect of general good management, enabling them to keep more land under that staple, is an essential article, which would make a vast difference in the interest of Britain. No object in the American department is of such consequence; and this should induce the administration to take whatever measures that

could be defired, in order to improve the agriculture of these provinces. Means might be invented which would introduce

by degrees better ideas.

Among the articles of improvement, which are the most obvious, there is nothing which demands greater attention than the culture of filk. None of our colonies enjoy a climate so well adapted to the purpose: mulberry trees are found every where in profusion, and the work of winding the filk, and attending the worms, might be carried on without any material interruption of their tobacco culture; but the advantage of making filk, is its being in a great measure proper for uniting with almost any business, fince women, old, infirm, persons, and even children, make as good a figure in it as the most robust men, a point of vast consequence. The common objection is, the want of hands; but that feems to be made by persons who are not acquainted with the business: five or fix weeks in a year would be sufficient for the work, and a family of a moderate number might, it is very well known, make 40 or 50 l. a year, which would at once be 40 or 501. sterling a year to them, an object of equal confequence with any that could be found.

is supposed that the number of people in the tobacco colonies does not fall short of 800,000; if silk was well understood among them, it would be no difficult matter to have from them as many pounds of silk, without any deduction from their tobacco; but if only 500,000l. were made, it would add exceedingly to the wealth both of Britain and the colony.

In a country newly fettling, or fettled, people really cannot spare either the time or attention, finall as it is, for making filk; but the case is very different in Maryland and Virginia, which are in a great measure well peopled countries, compared to feveral of our colonies. The people are numerous enough to make it an object of consequence, and are in general sufficiently at their ease to render the undertaking as profitable as it is in Italy or China. I cannot but attribute the remissness shewn in this article, to a want of people, or of time, but merely to that of attention and knowledge. They are unacquainted with the conduct of the worms, and the winding of the filk, and probably think it a more troublesome business than it is, and one which is of much longer duration. But this ignorance might foon be banished,

if persons skilled in the culture were sent from Europe to instruct them; a few, moving through these provinces, and shewing the women the management (which is a matter of entertainment rather than of labour) would in a few years make it familiar to abundance of families. The importance of silk from our colonies, is an object that well deserves some expence, it will pay excellently for it; since there is great difference between paying for our raw silk with money, and buying it with our manusactures.

Another article to be mentioned here, is the culture of vines, for which the back parts of Virginia are as well if not better adapted to than those of Pensylvania: wine is another commodity which the nation is in as great want of from the colonies as any other, for the fums paid by this kingdom to France, Spain, and Portugal, for this production of their lands, are immense. There is the greatest reason to suppose, that vineyards would thrive here advantageously, from the uncommon plenty of wild vines found in the woods thro' all the back country. The planters know not what would be the effect of culture on these vines, though the grapes at present will

will not make good wine, yet is there no reason to think that cultivation, upon approved principles, would not render them of a quality sufficiently excellent? The richest vineyards of Champagne and Burgundy, left wild, would, it is well known, produce a wine far enough from the flavour of those celebrated ones: it is ploughing between the rows, dreffing, and pruning, that gives the flavour to the grapes; and why should not the same causes have the same effect in America? But the trial upon a large scale, and executed with the requifite skill and spirit, would prove this: for attaining fo excellent a purpose, it would be necessary to plant a large vinevatd, in a proper fituation, respecting aspect and foil, and to cultivate it by hands brought from the vine-countries of Europe. At the same time, divisions should be allotted to fets of European and Madeira vines, of various forts; by which means it would be found with certainty what the foil and climate would yield in this article of husbandry. Probably the native wine would, with culture, produce the best wine, from its agreeing with the peculiar climate of North America.

In

In all colonies, government should be at the expence of a large plantation, for the valuable purpose of making experiments on those products, which are defired to be produced. Thus in the back parts of Virginia, in such a plantation, should be cultivated vines among other articles: by fuch a conduct, that certainty would be gained which we want at present. The Society for the Encouragement of Arts Manufactures and Commerce, have offered fome very fensible and patriotic premiums for planting the largest quantity of setts in various districts: such endeavours can never be too much commended; but at the same time it wants not much fagacity to foresee that the effect must be very trifling: such premiums may be easily gained, without the knowledge that is defired; for suppose a certain number of fetts planted (not amounting to any thing like a sufficiency for one tenth of a vineyard) this is but of little consequence, if the succeeding management is not duly and spiritedly performed, and by persons skilled in the vineyard culture; points which it is not to be supposed will be attended to by the accidental persons that may be candidates for fuch

fuch premiums. And how is the fociety, or any persons in England to know, whether the person who plants the greatest number of fetts, is fituated in the most favourable spots-or possesses a soil equally proper with many other tracts in the province? All fuch experiments should certainly be encouraged, but there is very little reason to believe that they can be attended with any great effect.

The want of people is urged in this case, as well in that of filk; and I own with much more reason, fince population is more necessary for the management of vineyards, than for that of filk-worms; but in answer to this, I should propose the employment of negroes. Why should not they be instructed in pruning and dreffing vines, as well as pruning and picking tobacco, or the operofe performances they execute in the culture of fugar, in the manufacture of which there is very great dexterity requisite, so that negroe boilers, &c. have been fold for above three hundred pounds a-piece, when experienced in the work. There can be no doubt but they might be employed in the culture of vines equally well, and perhaps to great advantage; this is a point of importance which should be VOL. I.

well attended to, for the vineyard culture requires many hands, of some kind or other; and as the colonies have not the common population (except in certain diftricts) sufficient for the purpose, vine planters would be under a necessity of depending for at least much of the work on slaves, the number of which can be multiplied at pleasure to any amount. In the article of cooperage, the Virginians would have great advantage over the vine countries of Europe; their woods would yield them staves, hoops, and heading upon the spot, instead of fending those articles to the West Indies. The length of freight from America to England might eafily be remedied, by favouring the import at the customhouse; perhaps it would be proper to exempt them for some time from all duties.

I have in several parts of this work mentioned the great importance of raising hemp in our colonies, and at the same shewn the the dissiculties which have prevented any export of it, except the tobacco colonies; these are principally the want of good land, or plenty of manure. But they have a native hemp in Virginia, which they call silk-grass, which might probably be made to answer many purposes of the high-

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 275
est use, if not exceed the common hemp,
since the threads of it are stronger; some
most excellent fabrics have been made in
private families of this grass, which shew
it to be perfectly well adapted to a manufacture, yet has it been quite neglected:
besides this silk-grass, they have three or
four forts of native hemp, which thrive
well on their poorest lands, and which have
been found to answer well in culture on a
small scale *.

It is impossible to know what the merit of the plants indigenous in these colonies, is, unless there was a plantation eftablished at the public expence, under the direction of a skilful botanist, and one perfectly well acquainted with the practice, as well as the theory of agriculture. In fuch a plantation, improvements might be made in the culture of tobacco: vineyards might be planted and cultivated, both of the native vines, and also of foreign ones. Experiments might be made on the culture of filk. All the native plants, like those I have just mentioned, which promised any thing of utility, might be brought into culture, and trials made of

^{*} Mitchel's Present State, p. 261.

their worth, as materials for manufacture. Such a plantation well supported, would be attended with some, if not all those excellent consequences which flowed from the gardens of the Dutch East India Company, at the Cape of Good Hope. Such objections may be made to the propofal I have now offered, as were doubtless made to the establishment of those famous gardens; but the company wifely rejected objections, when they did not amount to a proof that the measure was wrong; and it has accordingly turned out one of the finest monuments of the spirit of that celebrated body of merchants. Objections may certainly be made to the proposal, and the expence mentioned as a reason for not adopting a defign which could not fail of being most highly beneficial; but the expence is a very poor reason against meafures of this nature, unless it was urged by ministers who shewed, in all their other actions, the same spirit of economy which feemed to dictate fuch a refusal.

On another occasion I remarked, that the heat of the climate of Pensylvania burnt up the grasses of the pastures, except the low tracts over which water was thrown; this is yet stronger with Virginia and Mary-

land,

land, which are hotter than Pensylvania; for this reason the culture of lucerne would, in these provinces, be attended with yet greater advantages: their tobacco and hemp demand far more manure than they can at present raise, no object therefore can be of greater importance than an increase of it. This is only to be brought about by keeping their cattle confined; if they were folded in yards, fed in the foiling way, on lucerne, they would raise greater quantities of dung than in any other method could be effected. This obfervation is also applicable to the winter food of cattle; the climate of these colonies is so mild, that the cattle run out all winter; which, though an amazing advantage to the planter in many respects, is yet a preventive of raising manure, for it is the confinement alone of cattle which affords that. Upon this principle the planters here ought to attend to cabbages, turneps, potatoes, &c. as well as their brethren in the more northern settlements.

the Millimpel, to the fouth of the former ther, most of the country to the north of it belonging the it bix Nations, partly in-

respect by them, and part their bunded T 3 CHAP.

C H A P. XVIII.

THE OHIO.

Description of the Countries adjacent to the Obio—Staples—New colony—Principles on which it is founded—Remarks.

HIS immense country, which in our maps is laid down as a part of Virginia, reaches from the eastward of lake Erie, on the frontiers of New York, in latitude 43°, to its junction with the Missisppi, in latitude 36 10; the length of this tract, in a strait line, is not less than 800 miles. For 300 miles it bounds on the mountains, which are the limits of Pensylvania, from which to lake Erie is an oblong of 200 miles long, by about 100 broad, which space is one of the finest parts of North America. But the terriritory which is here principally to be confidered, is to the fouth of this, from the neighbourhood of Fort Pitt, to the Cherokee river, which falls into the Ohio, near the Mississippi, to the south of the former river, most of the country to the north of it belonging to the Six Nations, partly inhabited by them, and part their hunting ground.

The

The want of fresh land in Virginia, for the tobacco planters to spread themselves over, occasioned many settlers to pass the Alligany mountains, and fix themfelves on the rivers that fall into the Ohio; this was so early as from 1750 to 1755. the French had in 1748 and 1749 partly usurped and secured all this tract of back country, by their forts; a plan which they afterwards brought fully into execution; and when they were informed of the step taken by the British settlers, they warned them from what they called their master's territories, and foon after by force drove them back. This was the origin of the late war; the events of which relating to this country need no recapitulation here.

Upon the conquest of Fort du Quesne, the back settlers of Virginia and Pensylvania, renewed their emigration, and in great numbers once more passed the mountains, and settled themselves on the Ohio and its branches. Here they cleared grounds, and began their plantations; but in the latter end of 1763, a proclamation appeared, which sorbid all settlements beyond the rivers, which fall into the Atlantic Ocean. But the people who had

fixed themselves on the fertile lands of the Ohio, were too well pleased with their fituation to obey this proclamation, while others continued daily to join them.

The territory in which they planted themselves being without the bounds of the provinces of Virginia and Pensylvania, the people who had fettled there became foon a lawless set, among whom a licentious spirit prevailed; living without government, they had continued quarrels with the Indians, and the whole aspect of their affairs foreboded no good. The country in which they fettled belonged to the Six Nations, who complained repeatedly of this invasion of their property, offering to the governor of Virginia to fell their right in all the country to the fouth of the river Ohio.

Their remonstrances were too much flighted, for it was several years before any measures were taken to give them satisfaction; from remonstrating they proceeded to threaten in terms fevere, though not departing from respect. Then it was that a conference was held with the chiefs of these nations, and a bargain was struck: for the fum of fomething more than ten thousand pounds paid by government to the Six Nations, they made over all their right

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 281 right to the tracts of country to the fouth of the Ohio.

This purchase was made, not with a view to encourage any settlements beyond the mountains, but only to satisfy the Indians; the tenor of the proclamation of 1763 was adhered to, and the governor of Virginia ordered to admit of no colonization within the specified limits. But such orders could not be obeyed; for the country was found so fertile and pleasant, that fresh numbers every day thronged thither; and the expediency of establishing a government over them, was found daily greater.

In this fituation of affairs it was, that an affociation of gentlemen, principally of America, formed the plan of establishing a new colony in the lands thus purchased of the Indians; they brought into the ideasome respectable merchants of London, at the head of whom was a member of the House of Commons, Mr. Walpole. They petitioned the treasury for leave to execute their plan, offering to pay to government the ten thousand pounds the whole country had cost, for the property of only a part of it, and to be at the whole expence of the civil government of the new province.

This

This petition was referred from the treafury to the board of trade, which board made a report upon the petition, in which they strongly condemned the project, offering the reasons on which they founded their opinion; reasons which were by no means satisfactory to the understanding of those who were well acquainted with the state of the colonies.

The affair then came before the privy council, in which it was debated, and a difference of opinion found, which occafioned a debate; it ended in the petition being granted; after which Mr. Walpole and his affociates took fuch measures as they thought necessary for the establishment of their new colony.

This is the history of the transaction brought down to the present time *; the latter part is too recent to know upon what terms the proprietors portion out the lands, nor yet are the exact limits known: but the accounts we have had of the country before it was thought of establishing a colony in it, are such as will enable us to form a pretty clear idea of it. In the ob-

^{*} Since this was written, it has been reported that fome interruption has happened in the grant.

fervations on the report of the board of trade on the petition of Mr. Walpole and his associates, the following circumstances

are drawn up.

First, The lands in question are excellent, the climate temperate, the native grapes, silk worms, and mulberry-trees are every where; hemp grows spontaneously in the vallies and low grounds; iron ore is plenty in the hills, and no soil is better adapted for the culture of tobacco, slax, and cotton, than that of the Ohio.

Second, The country is well watered by feveral navigable rivers, communicating with each other; and by which and a short land-carriage of only forty miles, the produce of the lands of the Ohio can, even now, be sent cheaper to the sea-port town of Alexandria, on the river Potomack, (where general Braddock's transports landed his troops) than any kind of merchandize is at this time sent from Northampton to London.

Third, The river Ohio is, at all feasons of the year navigable for large boats like the west country barges, rowed only by sour or five men; and from the month of January to the month of April large ships may be built on the Ohio, and sent laden with

with bemp, flax, filk, &c. to this kingdom.

Fourth, Flour, corn, beef, ship-plank, and other necessaries can be fent down the stream of the Ohio to West Florida, and from thence to the islands, much cheaper and in better order, than from New York

or Philadelphia.

WILL

Eifth, Hemp, tobacco, iron, and fuch bulky articles, can also be fent down the stream of the Ohio to the sea, at least 50 per cent. cheaper than these articles were ever carried by a land-carriage of only fixty miles in Pensylvania; -- where waggonage is cheaper than in any other part of North America.

Sixth, The expence of transporting British manufactures from the sea to the Ohio colony will not be fo much as is now paid, and must ever be paid to a great part of the countries of Pensylvania, Virginia, and Maryland.

That we may more particularly elucidate this important point, we shall take the freedom of observing—that it is not disputed, but even acknowledged, by the very report now under confideration, that the climate and foil of the Ohio are as favourable as we have described them; and as to the

Mitchel was employed by the ministry to take

take an accurate survey of all the back countries of North America, most of them being then but little known, except to the French, who were in possession of a line of forts through all North America. No person could have been more properly appointed, for he was not only able to lay down the country with exactness, but being well acquainted with practical agriculture in Virginia and Penfylvania, he was able to understand the nature and value of those countries he should traverse. This was the origin of his map of North America, the best general one we have had: at the time it was published, it was accompanied by a bulky pamphlet, written by the Doctor, and entitled, The Contest in America, in which he enters into a full elucidation of the importance of the back countries, and of the fatal effects which must flow from leaving the French in poffession of their encroachments. Among others he confiders particularly the territory of the Ohio, and shews of how much importance it is to the planters of Virginia; he there mentions the want of fresh lands for planting tobacco, and the necesfity of their being able to extend themselves for that purpose beyond the mountains.

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 287 tains. The country is described as one of the finest and most fruitful in all America, and abounding greatly in deer, wild cows, and wild oxen; and at the same time situated in one of the finest and most healthy climates in all that country.

This account agrees also with another which was given near an hundred years ago by La Honton, who, speaking of the country to the south of lake Erie, mentions its being one of the finest on the globe, both in respect of climate and soil; it is a tract, he observes, of vast meadows, full of wild bees and deer, and the woods of vines and wild turkies.

Dr. Mitchel, in another work published in 1767, (The Present State) gives other particulars concerning this territory, which deserve attention; and especially in the point of affording that fresh land which is so much wanted in the tobacco colonies, where their plantations (as was shewn in the article of Virginia) are exhausted by continual crops of that product: "they will," says he, "be in a short time worn out, and when that happens, there must be an end of the tobacco trade, without a supply of fresh lands, sit to produce that exhausting weed, as well as to maintain cat-

tle to manure them, with convenient ports and an inland navigation to ship off such a gross and bulky commodity; of which there are none in all the British dominions in North America, but the rich lands on the Mississippi and the Ohio: whoever are possessed of these must soon command the tobacco trade, the only confiderable branch of trade in all North America, and the only one that this nation has left" In other passages the same writer describes these lands as being of considerable depth and fertility, having a natural moisture in them, and being excellently adapted for hemp, flax, and tobacco; also that no country can promise better for filk, wine, and oil, the climate being dry, which is the contrary of the maritime parts of America, where the rains are almost continual. And from the natural plenty of grafs in meadows of great extent, with the general fertility of the foil, the maintenance of all forts of cattle would be perfectly eafy, and confequently provisions would be raised with scarcely any trouble; a point of great importance when a staple commodity is cultivated; for the planter ought to be able to give all his attention to the principal article: but if he is forced to divide

his strength for providing food for cattle, &c. he cannot raise such a quantity of his staple as if more favourably circumstanced.

In a word, this territory of the Ohio enjoys every advantage of climate and foil which is to be found in the back parts of Virginia, but in a much higher degree, the foil being far more fertile, and the climate more pleasant and more wholesome. The affertions in the observations on the report of the board of trade are strong to this point, and may be depended on, as feveral of the gentlemen in the affociation for establishing this colony have lived long in Virginia and Pensylvania, and appointed persons to gain intelligence of all the material circumstances concerning it. From these, and the other authorities I have mentioned, it is plain, that this new colony will probably be found of the highest confequence in the production of the following commodities. 100 at W 825337 in straighted in a stay of

TOBACCO.

This valuable staple is cultivated in Virginia upon the freshest and most fertile lands; none can be too rich for it: a newly broken up woodland is what it most af-Vol. I.

U fects,

fects, and is what the planters choose for it, whenever it is in their power. I before observed, that such new land was no longer in plenty in the tobacco colonies, which makes this acquisition of country of the more importance: here are immense forests upon a soil the most fertile that can be imagined, and confequently fuch a field for enlarging our tobacco plantations as the nation has long wanted. Such a foil may well prove an inducement to many to purchase great numbers of negroes, in order to employ them on staple productions, which in such fresh and fertile lands may fafely be expected to pay them better than in the old colonies, where the good land has been for some time scarce; that is private property: there is in several of our colonies great tracts that are excellent, but this is like the wastes in Britain; plenty of land is of no effect, if it is not to be had by the new fettlers without paying a large price for it. But the value of the lands on the Ohio is not disputed, the great point for tobacco is that of carriage; for it is fo bulky, that if carriage is expensive, it cannot be brought cheap enough to market. The proprietors give the following account of the communication with the Atlantic. " During the laft

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 291 last French war, when there was no back carriage from the Ohio to Alexandria, the expence of carriage was only about a balfpenny a pound, as will appear from the following account, the truth of which we shall fully ascertain, viz.

From Alexandria to Port Cumber- of per cwt.

land by water

From Port Cumberland to Red Stone

Creek, at fourteen dollars per waggon load, each waggon carrying fifteen cwt.

0 5 9

Note, The distance was then seventy miles, but by a new waggon road lately made, it is now but forty miles -- a faving, of course, of above one half of the ss. od. is at prefent experienced. If it is confidered that this rate of carriage was in time of war, and when there were no inhabitants on the Ohio, we cannot doubt but every intelligent mind will be fatisfied that it is now less than is daily paid in London for the carriage of coarse woollens, cutlery, iron ware, &c. from several counties in England." And in the enumeration of advantages quoted above, it is afferted, that large ships may be built on the Ohio, and fent loaded, from January to April, to Bri-U 2 tain;

tain; also that provisions and lumber may be sent from thence cheaper to the West Indies, than from New York or Philadelphia.

These accounts call for several material observations: as to the truth of them. they are advanced in such a manner, and by fuch persons, that we have no reason to doubt it; nor should I omit to remark, that the account coincides with others, particularly with the exportation which the French are well known to have carried on from the Illionois, and do at present carry on from thence. But it was never known that the mouth of the Mississippi was navigable for large thips; Captain Pittman, who surveyed the river, says, a thirty-fix gun frigate has gone over with her guns out; but after you are over the bar, he acknowledges there is depth of water, all the way up, for any ship whatever. The proprietors remark, that half the 58. od. is faved; but that does not appear, as the price from Alexandria to Fort Cumberland is not changed; but supposing instead of 4s. 2d. from Fort Cumberland to Redstone Creek, that it should be only 2s. then the total price per cwt. would be 38. 7d. or per ton 3l. 11s. 8d. Now two hogfheads

heads of tobacco make a ton, which at 81. are 161. from which price the deduction of 31. 11's. 8 d. more than is paid by the planters near Alexandria, is too high to be submitted to, if any cheaper method can be found of conveying that product to shipping; and this cheaper method must furely be by the Mississippi, to the gulph of Florida; for if lumber and provisions can be fent by that channel cheaper than from New York or Philadelphia, as the proprietors affert, it must plainly be a cheaper way than a carriage which comes to 31. 11 s. 8d. per ton, which can never be supported by a commodity, the value of which at shipping is only 16 l. a ton. The reason of this carriage being so dear, must be the number of falls above Alexandria. As to wheat and other provisions, they could never be fent by fuch a conveyance, five quarters of wheat are a ton, which at 20s. a quarter come only to 5l. a fum that will never bear 3l. 118. 8d. carriage before it gets to the hipping; and if it is reckoned at 30s. or 71. 10s. still 31. 11s. 8d. is far more than it would bear.

Relative to the mother country, it is of very little consequence whether wheat and U 3 pro-

provisions can be exported from a colony or not, because staple commodities alone are valuable to Britain; but to fettlers it is an object to know if all the furplus of their products can be exported to advantage. What they may be by the Mississippi is not the point at present, but certainly they cannot be to the Atlantic. By the accounts of the proprietors it is clear, that no commodity fearcely can be raifed, but what may be sent from the Ohio to the West Indies. This concern of navigation is of great consequence to the tobacco planter, whose product is one of the most bulky staples of America; and in Virginia and Maryland the convenience of water-carriage is so great, that many planters load fhips at their own doors; but this is not in common to be expected, though it feems that it might be the case along the Ohio, if once the navigation of the Miffiffippi be well understood from practice.

In respect of the advantages for tobacco planting, that result from a great plenty of land, enabling the planter to keep whatever stocks of cattle he wants, and to raise provision for the plantation, no country in America is comparable to the territory in question, where a country is now settling

more

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 295 more than 500 miles long, by from 2 to 300 broad, possessing, in the utmost luxuriance of plenty, every necessary of life.

good vino H E M P.

As tobacco requires for yielding great crops a rich woodland that is rather dry; hemp on the contrary, loves a large degree of moisture, in rich low lands. Such are found in great plenty in all the valleys, between the hills, in the new colony, where the foil is natural to this production, as we may judge from the circumstance of such quantities of wild hemp being found in almost all the low lands. This circumstance shews also how well the climate may be expected to agree with it. There is all the reason in the world to think that the nation's expectations of having hemp from the colonies will at leaft, after so many disappointments, be answered by the lands on the Ohio. They are, it is universally agreed, of that nature which is peculiarly adapted to the production; the vales are rich, deep, moift, and so fertile that it will be many years before they are exhaulted. This is precifely what has been fo long wanted; for if hemp will not pay for the employment of negroes, it will never be made U4

made an article of culture in large : fecondary objects are always neglected; it is only those of the first importance which enjoy that degree of attention necessary to make any thing fucceed. The only thing to be feared, upon this principle, is the neglect of the planter, who, used to tobacco, may be so eager in raising that staple as to neglect every other. Neglect of this fort sometimes gives rise to ideas of incapacity in a country, when the fault is only in the cultivator: for this reason I cannot but regret, that the proprietors offer of ten thousand pounds should have been accepted; they ought to have been bound to supply the navy with a given quantity of hemp, the growth of the colony, annually: this would have forced them to give a degree of attention to this important article, which in the present case may not be thought of. Nothing is more common in the establishment of colonies, than proprietors to make large promises at first, and afterwards to forget that ever fuch things were thought of. The territory of the Ohio is in no want of encouragement from the proprietors; but people are so apt to move only in their accustomed line, and so averse from all useful trials and experiments, that

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 297 they should in some cases be driven to do that which is equally for the interest of their country and themselves.

degranes ov I N E S.

Of all North America, this is the tract which bids fairest for yielding wine: the native vines are in greater plenty and variety, than in any other part; the country at some distance from the Ohio is hilly and very dry, and in some places even rocky; but these plants do not require the rocky foil near fo much as European ones; for they thrive and bear well on rich deep foils. "We have feen, says Dr. Mitchel, fifteen different forts of native grapes there, the like of which growing wild are certainly not to be found in any part of the world. The ordinary forts of these in Virginia, yield a wine fo like the common Bourdeaux wine, that it is difficult to diffinguish the one from the other; and from another fort, some wine has been made which was compared by good judges, both here and there, to the best that is drank, Other forts yield wine exactly like the Lif-But instead of these, they have transplanted grapes from the hills of Normandy to the maritime parts of Virginia

and Carolina, where no one could expect them to thrive nigh fo well as they do. They ripen there in the beginning and middle of August, when no one can expect to make good wine; although they yield a very good wine for prefent drinking. But this is the most improper for their climate of any grape that grows; neither is it the true Burgundy grape for which they got it." From hence it is easy to be gathered, if the fact was not well known, that these territories on the Ohio must be well adapted to vineyards; much more fo than any maritime part of that continent; for near the sea the rains are almost incesfant, whereas upon the Ohio the climate is very dry, and on the Miffiffippi it rarely rains. This is a circumstance extremely favourable to the vineyard culture, which never does well in a country where much rain falls: all the fine wines come from countries which enjoy upon the whole, a climate dry on comparison with others, and some remarkably so.

Wine is another commodity which will bear no long land carriage, since to become an object of exportation from America to Britain, it much be afforded at a low price; wines upon the par with the red

port

port of Portugal ought not to exceed 10 or 121. a pipe, prime cost, and perhaps not fo much; this is 20 or 24 l. a ton; fo that hemp is, in proportion of weight, as valuable a commodity. It will certainly be found, that the Mississippi must be the conveyance of both tobacco, hemp, and wine, to the fea; land-carriage will add too much to the expences: a fresh reason for the navigation of the Mississippi being immediately and accurately examined. If fhips of only 100 tons could (as the proprietors affert large ones can) be built on the Ohio, and fent at a certain feafon of the year, laden to Britain with hemp, tobacco, and wine, the advantage would be the most profitable application of the timber in the world; as well as casks for the wine and tobacco.

SILK.

All this territory abounds with mulberry trees, in an extraordinary manner; and it is very well known, that people in the new colony will foon be in plenty; the furplus of population in Penfylvania, New York, Jersey, Virginia, and Maryland; a furplus which is great, as is well known from various circumstances before

mentioned, fuch as numerous petitions to fettle in the northern parts of New England; repeated ones for lands on the Ohio; and 30,000 people already fettled there, even without the advantage of a government being established; also the well known want of fresh lands for tobacco. If the accounts we have had from all parts of the central colonies be well confidered. there can be no doubt remain that 500,000 persons at least will, in a few years, be found in this colony, fince it is that tract of country which has for fo many years been the object of their ardent desires. Silk therefore certainly promifes to become an article of no flight consequence, in case the people will be perfuaded to give due attention to it; and in such cases I have often remarked, that the only sensible persuasions are examples and rewards. Every person might make a pound of filk, without interruption of their agriculture, which would be to themselves, as well as to Britain, an object of consequence; but if the business was well attended to by whole families, who understood the conduct of it, then much larger quantities might be produced: and in such case it would be found, for the

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 301 time it required, one of the most valuable staples in the world.

COTTON.

This plant grows spontaneously from the fouthern parts of Pensylvania to Florida: in Virginia they have some that is excellent, and in some respects superior to that of the West Indies, particularly for mixing with wool. Upon the Ohio, the foil, after being exhausted by tobacco, would yield large crops of this for ever; the climate is better adapted to it, and the quantity gained would be greater. Cotton is not an article of sufficient value to be the fole product of a plantation; but as a fecondary object it might be cultivated with good profit. This part of husbandry is not sufficiently attended to in our colonies; the planters bestow all their time and attention to their grand staple, so as to overlook all inferior articles; but this a miftaken conduct; they can have no crop in this latitude that will employ them the whole year; the fenfible management would be to have feveral, fo as to employ their flaves on them in succession. Wheat may be the most valuable product of a British farm; but this does not prevent the far-

mer from fowing barley, oats, pease, and beans; nor does corn in general prevent his cultivating turneps, carrots, and potatoes, which again leave time for clover and grasses: and it is to this various application of his land, that he is as much obliged for his profit, as to any other circumstance. Sawing lumber does not equal (except in the lands that must be cleared for the crops) the culture of any staple: among these secondary objects, cotton will here be found of no slight importance.

INDIGO.

The finest indigo is that of Guatimala, the climate exceeding hot; in St. Domingo the French raise large quantities that is excellent; and in Carolina it is become a staple of great consequence: the profit depends much on the heat of the climate, as may be judged from its being cut five times in St. Domingo in a season, three or sour in Carolina, and two or three in Virginia; for there is some indigo planted in that province, notwithstanding its making no figure in the exports. On the Ohio there is great reason to suppose it may be cultivated

vated to good advantage, the foil being admirably rich, and the climate superior to Virginia; but a strong proof is its having long been an article of export from the Illionois fettlements, which are full as northerly as any part of the colony of the Ohio. In Carolina they plant it on their dry fands; but this is for want of fuch a rich, deep, black mould as is found through the new colony, where foil may make good amends for want of fo hot a fun; a point which feems almost proved by St. Domingo fo much exceeding Carolina, though the fummers (notwithstanding the difference of latitude) are hotter in Carolina than in that island; but in the latter it is planted on fresh woodlands to prepare them for fugar, and in the former on a This article is perfectly well poor fand. adapted to the Ohio in another respect, which is that of its great value in proportion to its weight, which is so high that the price of an expensive carriage would be scarcely felt. This is a product which might (as well as filk) be fent over the m auntains to be shipped in Virginia.

mayibe rule optionized promatine in

MADDER,

An article of great importance in the manufactures in England, and bought of the Dutch in great quantities at the high price of from 80 l. to go l. a ton; from which we fee it ranks among those that will very well pay the expence of carriage from the Ohio to Virginia. It is amazing that this article of cultivation has never been introduced in large in our colonies, though it is beyond doubt one which would agree as well with their climate as any thing they cultivate. In Europe the finest grows in Turkey, but the most in Holland, Flanders, and the Palatinate, from whence there can be no hefitation of its fuiting the excellent climate of the Ohio. Madder requires a rich, deep, flexible mould; no degree of fertility is too great for it: of all foils I should suppose a new deep woodland would be the most proper for it; in this respect it would be a rival to tobacco, but then it would probably pay better for it, and in the value of the weight infinitely exceed it. In England there has been raised fifteen hundred per acre, and the expence in labour may be thus calculated from the totals mentioned in the account.

A	MERICAN HO	SBAND	RY.	199	05
.10 20	I mod in blue	boulgar	1.	s.	d.
1767.	Four ploughing	S, LI JLL	O	4	8
-uchc	Ridging up,	11/4/11	0	1.1	6
-11/98	Water-furrowin	ig,	· o	I	6
1768.	Planting, -		0	18	0
prosn	Hand-weeding,	<u>ب</u>	0	12	0
	Horse-hoeing,	4	0	2	4
34.71	Water-furrowin	ıg, -	0	I	0
1769.	Three hand-hoo	eings,	ं	10	0
	Horse-hoeing,	o Sing	. 0	3	0
	Water-furrowin	ig, -	0	I	0
1770.	Two hand-hoei		lange.	0	0
shano	Horse-hoeing,	willy to	0	1	6
Darro	Taking up,	WON I	3	0	0
(13.23)	Drying, at 3s.	onless	2	5	0
at Jabi	inter to annual to	(60,464,25	ouh	vag	0.1
-1000	by Haves , the pr	Total	10	I	6
blaow	hi bas, and bangi	H SHP	, Lilly	44: (100
-13 0	Produ	ce.	al In	101	TO
-1000	w no night on w	sa synth	on ca	1 503	101
TECWI	at 41.	a f.	60	0	o

The drying, probably, at so large an expence, is peculiar to the climate of England and Holland; but on the Ohio the sun would be much superior to the stove drying, as it is for the wild madder of Turkey. I shewed, under the article of Virginia, that the expence of an acre of Vol. I.

tobacco in England would in labour be 61. 1s. 8d. and the produce is only 51. 6s. 8d. from whence it was plain, that it is an article of culture only fit for very cheap labour, fuch as that of negroes; but on the contrary we find, that madder is far more valuable: 15 cwt. indeed was the greatest crop got by one gentleman with manuring, but then other persons in the same register got 20 cwt. and even 30 cwt. without manuring, only by planting on land of superior natural fertility: where is more fertile land to be met with than the fresh grounds on the Ohio? Now the culture of tobacco without the produce being sufficient even to pay the expence of labour of whites, is extremely profitable by flaves; the proportion would hold with madder, and it would be found far superior to tobacco; the expence on carriage and freight on a commodity worth 801. a ton would not be felt.

Rich, deep, black land, moist, but not wet, is the great article wanted for madder, or else such an immense plenty of dung, as will convert an indifferent loam into such a soil, which can be had only in three or four situations in a great kingdom: natural fertility is what we ought there-

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 307 fore to seek; the price of labour evidently is of no weight—yet is this circumstance, like all others in favour of America, for that the labour of slaves is as three to one cheaper than that of English labourers, was sufficiently proved by the product of to-

bacco; instead of yielding a profit not anfwering the expence, but with negroes being advantageous enough to give fortunes to the planters, did they know how to keep

the money they make.

This object of introducing madder as a staple in the new colony, in order to fave two or three hundred thousand pounds a year, which we at present pay to Holland for the commodity, an absolute necessary in our manufactures, ought to be well confidered. That it would thrive to admiration there, cannot be doubted, fince the foil in many tracts is equal to any in the world; and the climate very fimilar to that of Turkey, where it is a common spontaneous growth. No doubts therefore can be entertained of the produce; as to labour, the above account of 101. in England near London would not be 41. by means of negroes; and if the product was no more than 15 cwt. and the value 60l. in London, the account in general would stand thus:

X 2 Labour,

	1.	s.	d.
Labour,		12	100 24
Carriage from the Ohio to Alexandria, at 31. 118. 8d. per ton,	2	13	9
	4	2	6
Total	10	16	3

Thus would the Ohio planter land his madder at London at nearly the same expence that labour alone stands the Surry or Kentish planter in! If this is not an immense encouragement to them to enter deeply into the culture, nothing can; but they will in this, as in numerous other cases, want example, visible proof; which can only be given them by the proprietors establishing a plantation for experiments in large, which would presently ascertain this and other points of great importance.

There is one circumstance in this culture which would make it suit extremely the usual economy of a plantation in North America. It is three years in the ground, and might be lest four or five with proportionable profit, during which time there is nothing to do to it in winter; all the operations it requires are over between March and October, and when taken up the drying is over in less than a month; thus would the negroes have the whole winter

to faw lumber, or to be employed in other articles of culture, that required winter operations: this a point much attended to in America, and particularly by new fettlers; for coming to lands, great parts of which are a forest, it is of vast consequence to them to be able to convert the wood into lumber, as fast as they clear the ground, by which means they make that preparatory work pay its own charges. The great inducement to such numbers of people to fettle in America, is the plenty of land; but if that land, as it generally is, is covered with timber that can be converted to no use, the expence of clearing would be too great to undertake; where they now can take up an hundred acres, they would not then be able to take up ten. Here lies one of the great advantages of that noble navigation from the Ohio down the Mississippi to the gulph of Mexico, which the proprietors affure us is a more ready and cheap conveyance, than by sea from New York or Philadelphia.

Other staples might be mentioned for this colony, which would fuit it in great perfection, and which ought likewise to be cultivated, but these are the material ones. It is never advantageous to have the at-

tention of planters too much taken up with one object, as has been the case long in Virginia and Maryland; the consequence of which is, that when land fails them for their favourite staple, they have no succedaneum, but must turn mere farmers for raifing corn and provisions, which has actually been the case in those two colonies; whereas by giving that attention to hemp, flax, tobacco, vines, indigo, filk, cotton, madder, &c. which English farmers give to as great a variety of products, they would be certain of some valuable staple for ever; and also be able to apply every part of their estates to some profitable purpose. Tobacco, indigo, or madder, hemp, vines, filk, and cotton, might be in culture on the same plantation, and each on a different soil. This would increase the profit of planting very much, and make the produce of negroes much more than 201. a-head, which is the calculation of those employed on good land in tobacco.

Under the articles tobacco and Indian corn, I have before remarked, that the reason the planters in America did not, on a given quantity of land, equal the profit of the farmer's in Britain, was their executing much work by hand labour, which

might

might as well and better be done by horse work. In Virginia, a negroe pays about 16 l. in tobacco, and 4l. in fundry articles. It will admit of no doubt, that the fums will be higher on the Ohio; but at the fame time they ought by management to be carried as high as possible; which can only be done by fubstituting the plough and horse-hoes, instead of the spade and hand-hoe: the expence of horses on the Ohio, or in Virginia, is not what it is here, for the price of the beaft is not more than a third or fourth, and his keeping not a tenth of what it is in Britain. If these ideas were adopted, their profit would rife greatly.

An English farm of an hundred acres, 60 arable, and 40 grass; or 70 and 30, or even 80 and 20, may be cultivated upon the most improved methods in common crops, by three men and four horses; and if the land is good the average product will be 41. an acre, or 4001. a year; thus the working hands yield 1331. a piece, this is by the addition of four horses, which indeed in Britain will, if well kept, cost sull as much as four more men; but taking it in that light, and call the working hands seven, the annual produce per hand will be

571. But this is quite different in America, for the four horses would not cost more that one man if a black; and if a white, 10 horses would not equal his expence: nor have I any doubt but by a proper and experienced use of horse work, every working hand might in the Ohio be made to produce 50l. or 60l. a-head at least: they would then have an assignment of many acres per head, instead of which two or three per flave is the common allowance; however, without supposing any fuch good management, it would be a very moderate supposition to calculate the produce per working hand, at 51. more than in Virginia, or Maryland, which the great superiority of fresh lands, so extraordinary for their fertitity, may well allow; and with the advantage of fo large a range as the planters will have here, and have not generally in the old tobacco colonies, a point of vast consequence, would justify an higher idea. If madder was undertaken, a much larger fum should be named; and yet how easy to introduce this upon a plantation, and extend the culture by degrees. Silk, madder, and indigo, of each but a small quantity, or only madder and filk, being so valuable, would pay the extra

expence of carriage and freight on the other commodities; but I shall suppose, by adopting these articles in part, each working hand to pay 25 l. and the extra expence of carriage of some articles more than is felt in Virginia. Upon this footing I shall calculate the expences of establishing a capital plantation on the Ohio; previous to which it may not be amiss to point out to the first settlers some signs whereby they are to judge of the soil, not only here, but through all these central colonies, and also those to the southward.

The trees, which are the spontaneous product of the land, should in general be first attended to; if they abound with fine tall, red hiccories, white oaks, chefnut oaks, fearlet oaks, tulip trees, black walnuts, locusts, mulberry trees, &c. they may be pronounced good, and the value will usually be in proportion to the fize and straitness of those trees; pines, live oaks, laurels, bays, -liquid amber, and water oaks are, among others, figns of bad land; and in general that foil will be best which is free from under-wood: nor should the planter take a few trees of any fort as his guide, but a predominancy of them in whole woods. This rule of judging must be united with

that of the appearance of the foil when dug into, particularly colour and depth; the black mould on a bed of loam is best : that on clay, good; but the light fandy tracts are in general bad, unless they are of a dark colour, and moist, with good trees growing from them; in that case they may be excellent; for fands differ as much as loams; the misfortune is, that in America the fands are generally white and dry, and produce little besides pines.

Besides tracts which may come under this description, he is farther to examine the meadows which are composed of fimilar foils, but without any trees, being covered with grass; these are to be judged by the height, thickness, and luxuriance of that grass. These tracts are common on the Ohio, and prove how valuable the country should be esteemed: they, like the woodlands, should be examined with the spade, in order to know the appearance of the foil. Besides these there are marshes or swamps, but not in great quantities, as in the maritime parts of America: the value of these depend on two circumstances, the richness of the soil, and the ease of being drained: the former is feen by the products; cedars are good figns, though

not very common; cypresses generally are found in them, and the excellency of the land perceived from the tallness, fize, and beauty of their stems: as to draining, it depends on the fituation, and on examining the means of carrying off the water, as in all other countries. These swamps and marshes when drained, if the soil is stiff, are the proper lands for hemp, not that it will not thrive as well on fertile uplands; but they may be applied to other crops. There are besides these hilly tracts, and the fides of mountains, generally of a gradual afcent, but sometimes sharp and rocky; on the latter vineyards may be planted, and also olives; on the former indigo, tobacco, madder, if rich, if indifferent, cotton, &c.

These are the soils and sort of tracts which are to be met with in the new colony; and I should observe that every kind of land here is equal to any in the world for the growth of wheat, maize, barley, oats, pease, beans, &c. all sorts of roots, and every kind of garden-stuff and fruit known in Europe. Of this no doubts can be entertained, when it is considered how well all these thrive in Maryland and Virginia, in the same latitude; whereas the Ohio is more fertile in soil, and far more tempe-

temperate and regular in climate, being free from excessive heats, and those violent colds which are found in the maritime parts of the continent.

In the disposition of new plantations it is of consequence that the planters give some attention to the fituation of their house and offices, a point which, in the hurry of the first building, is seldom thought of enough, net only as a matter of convenience and agreeableness, but also of health. In this continent the north-west wind brings the fevere weather, and the worst seasons: a house should be well sheltered from it by wood, but instead of having any idea of shelter, planters in general attack all the timber around their houses with such undiffinguishing rage, as not to leave themfelves in a few years a tree within fight. For convenience, as well as health and pleafure, the best situation would be in the centre of a space of wood in form of a crefcent; open to the fouth, and in front of the navigation which is to convey the product of the plantation, always chusing an elevated fituation, yet not the top of a hill, leaving as much afcent of wood behind the building, as descent of lawn before it. At all events a spot should be chosen where the **fhores**

shores of the river are high and bold, because nothing is more unwholesome than to live in the neighbourhood of a marsh or flat land that is apt to be overflowed. This in many of our colonies is not attended to, but it is because situations free from it are not very common; and in the fouthern ones, the rice culture makes them feek for swamps, the consequence of which is the unhealthi-

ness so much complained of.

Agriculture is followed in so imperfect a manner in our old colonies, owing to plenty of land, that one cannot expect to fee it well managed here, where land is fo much more plentiful; yet do I wish to see fome plantations laid out in a manner that shall obviate the objections to the careless husbandry of the Americans. I here mean particularly to hint at inclosures-not to fow or plant any piece of ground that is not well and substantially enclosed with a ditch, a bank, and live hedge; the expence would bear no proportion to the numerous advantages of it; besides that uncommon superiority in point of neatness and beauty: and in the disposition of the fields, some should undoubtedly be left occupied with the timber that is upon them, as a future supply, which will be a matter of great consequence,

not only to the public good of the colony, but also to the future private advantage of

the planter.

And here I shall once more observe, that for gaining the requisite knowledge of so extensive a tract of so noble a country, the proprietors would act with a patriotic spirit if they were to establish a plantation in a well chosen spot, including every variety of foil for trying large experiments on the preceding list of staples, and others that might be named. The expence would not be considerable; under the direction of a senfible, intelligent overseer, who was a man of integrity; the produce would be highly fufficient, after the first expences, to pay the annual charge. In such a plantation might be introduced the culture of hemp and flax on every fort of foil, to fee how far it might become the colony staple. Madder might be tried with the same design; vineyards should be planted, both of foreign and native grapes, for wines and raifins; filk should be made in large quantities; cotton tried with equal attention; and experiments made on indigo, to fee how far fertility of foil in an excellent climate would make amends for the want of greater heat. The native

native hemp, flax, filk-grass, and other indigenous plants brought into culture, that their qualities might be known; these would be noble designs, and could not fail of proving of great advantage to the colony, and of doing great honour to the proprietors.

I shall now proceed with the design of calculating the expences and profit of fixing a capital plantation on the Ohio, supposing the person to move from Britain, and to have money enough for all necessary

(but not superfluous) expences.

	Talk to		d alan	£.
Freight and expen fons from Lond	ces of a fan on to Alexa	nily of the	per-}	150
Freight of 10 tons			Salve Salve	55
One year's living	or board at 2	zol.	-	120
A fecond year's h	oufe-keepin	g, -	-	100
Fees of 10,000 acr			•	300
Building a house,			•	200
- offices,		•	•	150
Furniture,		•		150
Carriage of necessa	ries from Al	exandria t	o the Ohi	0, 50
A canoe, -		•		50
Boats, -		•		15
Implements,	orite install		_	200
Machine for rooting	g up trees,	-		80
A faw-mill,				500
50 horses, mares,	and stallion	s , -		250
50 cows, -				150
50 young cattle,	mot aller u	ora estata	negotal.	50
100 fwine,	. Martiney.	and or an	gen and	25
500 sheep,	Desirios de	de section		125
7070	transform Syr		equi des	L VALUE
		Carrie	d over £.	2720

The state Room States at the	Bro	ught fo	orward	f.	2720
Poultry, Repairs of implements,		11.24	1. 241		50
La	bour.	um si			USCALA USCALA
Attendance on cattle,	£	Ç. 30	9 840	(20)	g 10
Bailiff, (one year) Labour in clearing 20 ac wheat, at 11.	eres o	f 20			
Ditto 40 oats, at 16s.	0.40	32	roá. I	s.(1)	
70 turneps, at 11.	nomb (70			will.
On hay, mowing and maki arpent of natural meado	ng,&c	· { 30			
On fencing, -		50			
Orchard and garden,		20			
Sundries, -	3 • 54	30	25 (4). 3		HEAT,
40 negroes at 50l. Annual expence of negroe head, overfeer, 11.	es pe	r}40			*347 2000
Cloaths, 11.		40		16,30	
Sundry expences, -		40		inte line	160
					100
Si	eed.				No. of Asia
20 acres of wheat at 8s.		8		2183	Dane de
40 oats at 8s	dy Jene	16		, 201 100;	-24
		Carrie	ed over	f	5306
				~ :	_

All these articles are usually done by negroes for a third of this expence, but they are here reckoned at the rates of the labour of white servants, that the planter may not be supposed to have nothing but blacks about him.

AMERICAN HUSBAND	RY. 321
See that I	1. · s. d:
Brought forward	5306 00
70 turneps, 1s 3 10 0	
5 potatoes, 8s 2 0 0	1 76 L
Taxes,	5 10 0
Two years interest on 5300l.	30 00
1 wo years interest on 5300s.	530 0 0
£.	5871 10 0
2 0000	interests 2
Produce of second year	
40 negroes at 20l.	800 00
N. B. The first year of their labour	
reckoned 51. a-head lower than when	9400 ang p 145
experienced more.	-
	800 00
Third year.	
Taxes,	30 00
Buildings,	10 00
House-keeping,	100 0 0
Repairs and addition to implements	50 00
Labour as before, -	347 00
Seed ditto,	29 10 0
Incidents, Interest of 5400l	50 0 0
Allow towards carriage or freight of bulky	,
products, -	\$ 50 00
Expences on 40 negroes at 31.	120 00
Purchase of 20 at 50l.	1000 0 0
£.	2056 10 0
Produce.	ar vol som elem Voltare voltare
to negroes at 25l	1000 0 0
20 ditto at 20l	400 00
£.	1400 0 0
Vol. I. Y	Fourth

-		
HOI	rth	TRAF
TOU	1 111	year.

	I Ou	till yea				
				1.	8.	d.
Taxes, -		-	•	30	0	0
Buildings, .		•	•	20		0
House-keeping,	-			80		0
Implements,		(= Apr.)		50	0	0
Labour, -	•		•	347		0
Seed, -	•	• ,		29		0
Incidents, -		-		40	0	0
Interest -		2000				
		800	00	Ι.		
		1200	00	76 850T)	9511	
At 5 per cent.		60	00			
Before -		270				
			gar little (d s.	330	0	0
Freight, -	-	• -		60		0
Expences on 60 ne	groes a	t 31.	-	180	0	0
Purchase of 20 at 5	sol.	•	•	1000	0	0
			£.	2166	10	0
	Pro	duce.				_
60 negroes at 251.				1500	0	0
20 ditto at 201.				400		
						_
to onen i			£.	1900	0	0
	Fife	h year.	ng silas			
	1 111	i year.				
Taxes,				30	0	0
Buildings, -		•	•	- 20	0	0
House-keeping,				80	0	0
Implements,	50			50	0	0
Labour, -		-	- 1	347	0	0
Seed,			•	29	10	0
Incidents, -			-	40	0	0
		Carried	l over /	1 506	10	-

AMERICAN	Hu	SB	Al	1D	RY.	323
					1.	s. d
	Bro	ught	for	war	d 596	10 0
Interest,	2166	10	0		3,	
0.0 000	1400	0	0	į is		
0,0 0701	766	10	0		16 90	
1. 2873 13.9			-			
At 5 per cent. Before	38 330	0	0			
	33 - Line				-368	0 0
Freight, -	•	•			70	00
Expences on 80 negroes 20 at 50l.	s at 31.				1000	0 0
6-0 00824 A	1					
south a significant and a				£	2283	10 0
P	roduc	e.				A Commence
80 negroes at 251.	ner or		ili	1 31	2000	0 0
20 ditto at 201.	9. - 3.5 i	sten	•10	oil	400	00
ought cycry year, for lon wanting for	d zoor nodw	neg neg	1	£	2400	0 0
	th ye	ar.	ilz		19.1	Tuch
Taxes,					30	00
Buildings, -				-	20	00
House-keeping,		110	y h		80	00
Implements,			:01	105	60	00
Labour, -	-		•		347	00
Seed, -	•	1000	di		29	10 0
Incidents, -					40	00
Interest,	228			0	1	
	190	0 ()	0		
0.01.73	38	3 10)	0		Target a
At 5 per cent	10) 3		0		
Before,	368	3 0		0		
The transfer of the second				1175	-387	30
	Carrie Y 2	d or	rer	£	993	13 0

							s.	đ.
o or size previous		Broug	ht i	for	ward	993	13	0
Freight, -					•	80	0	0
100 negroes at 31.		14.	-		-	300	0	0
20 ditto at 50l.	•	ing special and			-	1000	0	0
					£.	2373	13	0
op 10	Pro	duce					161	
100 negroes at 251.		-		-		2500	0	0
20 ditto at 201.	-		-		•	2 500 400	0	0
0.01.5813)					£.	2900	0	0
					3 12			_

Here we find the receipt is more than equal to the annual expence, including the increase of 20 negroes bought every year, consequently the whole sum wanting for such a plantation is to be ascertained.

0 0 1 c2				1.	s. d.
First capital,	•		•	5871	10 0
Expences of third year,	2056	10	0		Houte
Produce of fecond,	800		0		alozak,
347 0 0				-1256	10 0
Expences of fourth year,	2166	10	0		Level 2.
Produce of third, -	1400	0	0	, alm	thion!
Section of Asc				-766	10 0
Expences of fifth year,	2283	10	0		
Produce of fourth, -	1900	0	0		
Service of the	-	-		-383	10 0
0.5		Т	otal	8278	00
Annual interest,				413	18 0

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 325 If no increase of negroes, the account would be :

Taxes, Buildings, House keeping, Implements, Labour, Seed, Incidents, Interest, Freight, Expences on 120 negroes at 31.			1.	s. d.
House keeping, 80 0 0 Implements, 50 0 0 O Labour, 347 0 0 Seed, 29 10 0 Incidents, 40 0 0 Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 3l 360 0 0		•	30	00
Implements, 50 0 0 Labour, 347 0 0 Seed, 29 10 0 Incidents, 40 0 0 Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 31 360 0 0	Buildings,		20	00
Implements, 50 0 0 Labour, 347 0 0 Seed, 29 10 0 Incidents, 40 0 0 Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 31 360 0 0	House keeping,	• 47	80	00
Seed, 29 10 0 Incidents, 40 0 0 O Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, - 80 0 0 O Expences on 120 negroes at 3l 360 0 0	Implements,		50	00
Incidents, 40 0 0 0 Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, - 80 0 0 2 360 0 0	Labour,		347	00
Interest, 413 18 0 Freight, 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 31 360 0 0			29	10 0
Freight, - 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 31 360 0 0	Incidents,	•		THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF THE
Freight, - 80 0 0 Expences on 120 negroes at 31 360 0 0	Interest,	- 60	413	18 0
	Freight,	•		
£. 1450 8 0	Expences on 120 negroes at 31.		360	00
		£.	1450	8 0

Produce.

120 negroes at 251. Expences,	•			3000 1450		
Profit, - House-keeping, Interest, -		•	•	1549 80 413	0	0
Total receipt,		12-401		2043	10	0

which from 82781. is per cent. 241.

During the preceding time, no produce is supposed from cattle, that in so great a space of country they might increase to great herds and flooks; but afterwards the annual product would be very great, as the numbers would be two or three thousand head of cattle, five or fix thousand sheep, and two or three thousand hogs; such Y 3 herds

herds have been known the property of fingle people in North Carolina, where they have not greater advantages, nor yet to great, as on the Ohio: these would yield annually near 1000l. a year in hides, wool, and barrelled meat for the West Indies, but I shall calculate only 300l.

		1.	s. d.
Receipt above,	-	2043	10 0
Cattle, -	•	300	00
	£.	2343	10.0

which from 82781. is per cent. 281.

This profit is considerable, not so much in itself, as in the circumstance of the planters being able annually to incorporate it into the old capital, and thereby yield a compound interest at that proportion. am of opinion, that husbandry in England will yield a greater profit than 24 l. per cent. if so large a sum as 8000l. is expended in stocking a farm. Calculations have been published of English husbandry, which shew that so high as 33 per cent. may be made in any part of the kingdom by good and improved husbandry, and above 20 per cent. by the most common crops. And I am clear, that if potatoes, carrots.

carrots, madder, hops, &c. were calculated (which do not come into those calculations) the profit might be carried to 40 or perhaps 50 per cent. in certain fituations; in this respect I am confident, that America cannot equal Britain, but in other points the superiority is entirely with her: that of the annual increase of culture is a very effential one. What a vast difference between the English farmer putting out his favings at 4 per cent. and his brother on the Ohio doing the fame at 24 compound interest! What a difference between the one living on another man's land, with a lease of twenty-one years, which is a long one, subjected to the caprice of a landlord or a steward, or sure of quitting at the end of his term, and the other living on his own extensive freehold of 10,000 acres! What a difference between 80 l. a year spent in all forts of necessaries, even bread, meat, malt, &c. by the farmer for house-keeping; and the same sum by the planter for tea, sugar, coffee, chocolate, spices, rum, and manufactures. Bread, meat, venison, fruit, fish, fowl, game in the utmost plenty, besides the corn, &c. the expence of which is before reckoned, but no produce!

In all these circumstances there can be no comparison: at the same time that the Ohio planter makes near as great interest from his first capital as the English farmer; at the same time that he is able to throw his favings annually into business at 28 per cent. compound interest; he lives like a country gentleman in Britain who has an estate of 2000 l. a year, and if the latter fpends half the year at London, much better; while the farmer, it is very well known, must fare very coarsely. I draw this comparison with no design to send British farmers to the Ohio. I am clear not one in the three kingdoms will go; had I thought a book would be an inducement to them, I would not have drawn up this calculation: it is written for the use of those who will go to America, whether books are published or not; and to them it is meant merely as advice, that they make, a proper choice of the colony they fettle in: many go to Nova Scotia, to New England, to New York, &c. where they can raise nothing advantageous to the commerce of Britain, and where they must live in a climate that is odious to a British constitution, at least during the severity of winter. There is no object in the whole range

range of American affairs of more importance than the directing new settlers, whether from Britain or foreign countries, to those parts of our colonies, which from their staple productions are really valuable to the mother-country; yet this matter, of as great consequence as it certainly is, has not by any means been so much attended to as it ought; for government has paid the freight of more men to Nova Scotia, than it has too Virginia and Maryland; though the former has no staple, and can only rival Britain in her fishery, and the latter one so valuable in every respect as tobacco.

pared with the violations of the other guler-

night. The fame, idention is also to be made tests parts

ngunda gagal vice anothers qual

-10 feet areas to exist a uncore

C H A P. XIX.

NORTH CAROLINA.

Climate of North Carolina—Productions— Soil—Common husbandry—Staples—Exports—Defects in their agriculture—Improvements proposed.

HIS province lies between lat. 341 and 361: it is hotter than Virginia, but in other respects the climate of these two provinces is very fimilar; North Carolina being hotter as you advance fouthward, until the most southerly parts are as hot as South Carolina. This gradation of heat is such as may be supposed from the variation of latitude; but not to be compared with the same parallels in other quarters of the world, no more than the other American territories. In winter they have frosts here fometimes very sharp, though not in general fo cold as in Virginia; and a warm day often follows a very cold The same distinction is also to be made between the maritime and back parts of the province that I mentioned before in VirVirginia; the coast, as far as it continues a state country, is excessive hot and very un-wholesome, like all the low sea-coasts in these southern countries; but when the country rises, and begins to be hilly, which is about one hundred or one hundred and sifty miles from the sea, and continuing till you come to the western mountains, in this part the climate is pure, temperate, and healthy.

The products of North Carolina are rice, tobacco, indigo, cotton, wheat, peas, beans, Indian corn, and all forts of roots, especially potatoes. Rice is not so much cultivated here as in South Carolina: but in the latter they raise no tobacco, whereas in North Carolina it is one of their chief articles. It grows in the northerly parts of the province, on the frontiers of Virginia, from which colony it is exported. Indigo grows very well in the province, particularly in the fouthern parts, and proves a most profitable branch of culture. Cotton does very well, and the fort is fo excellent, that it is much to be wished they had made a greater progress in it. The greatest articles of their produce which is exported are tar, pitch, turpentine, and

every

332 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.
every species of lumber, in assonishing quantities.

The foil in the flat country is in general fandy, and great tracts of it but indifferent in fertility; but others are rich, and will produce cotton, indigo, and Indian corn freely. It is in this part of the country that the swamps are to be found, which when drained yield rice: this forms a diftinction between North Carolina and Virginia; they have vast swamps on the coast of Virginia, but cultivate no rice, not because it would not grow, but from an idea that it requires, in order to yield large crops, a hotter fun. The swamps in North Carolina are some of them very rich, but remain undrained for want of people. In the back part of the country the foil is very fine, and in feveral tracts equal to the best of Virginia; and it improves as you advance towards the mountains. This is the case with all these colonies in the southern parts of America. In many of these backward tracts the land is a rich black mould. of a good depth, and highly fertile, especially the country on the river Pedee, &c.

It is extraordinary that more fettlements should not have been made in this coun-

try, notwithstanding the obstacles I have mentioned, confidering the pleafantness of it, and extreme fertility of the foil; these circumstances were also known many years ago, as appears by the travels through it of a Mr. John Lawson, surveyor-general of North Carolina in the year 1700, which were published in 1718 *. There are many curious particulars in it, and especially of the appearance of the back country, as will appear from the following extracts, which I make because the book is very scarce. " We went directly for Sapona Town: that day we passed through a delicious country (none that I ever faw exceeds it.) We saw fine bladed grass six feet high, along the banks of pleasant rivulets. Coming that day about thirty miles, we reached the fertile and pleasant banks of Sapona river, whereon stands the Indian town and fort. Nor could all Europe afford a pleasanter stream, were it inbabited by christians, and cultivated by ingenious hands. These Indians live in a clear field, about a mile square, which they would have fold me. This most pleafant river may be fomething broader than

^{*} The History of Carolina, small quarto.

the Thames at Kingston, keeping a continual pleafant warbling noise with its reverberating on the bright marble rocks. It is beautified with a numerous train of fwans and other water-fowl. One fide of the river is hemmed in with mountainy ground, the other fide proving as rich a foil to the eye of a knowing person with us, as any this western world can afford: it is as noble a river to plant a colony on as any I have met withal. Next morning we fet forward; all the pines were vanished, for we had feen none for two days. We paffed through a delicate rich foil this day, no great hills, but pretty rifings and levels, which made a beautiful country; we paffed likewise over three rivers this day. We were much taken with the fertility and pleasantness of the neck of land between these two branches. It is called Haw river, from the Siffipahaw Indians who dwell upon this stream; there being rich land enough to contain some thousands of famimilies, for which reason I hope, in a short time, it will be planted. This, river is much fuch another as Sapona, both feeming to run a vast way up the country. There is plenty of good timber, and especially oak; and as there is stone enough in both

both rivers, and the land is extraordinary rich, no man that will be content within the bounds of reason can have any grounds to dislike it. Some Virginia-men we met, asking our opinion of the country we were then in, we told them it was a very pleafant one: they were all of the same opinion, and affirmed that they had never feen twenty miles of fuch extraordinary rich land, lying all together like that betwixt Haw river and Achonedry town." Long after this account was written (viz. near seventy years) Dr. Mitchel gives it in general the same character. "There are five large rivers, fays he, which rife in the inland parts of North Carolina, the banks of which are rich and fertile, although the hills between them still partake of the barrenness of Carolina, as we are well informed by feveral whom we have recommended to fettle in the country. This feems to be the most improveable part of all the British dominions on this side of the Misfiffippi. But they have no navigation nor ports to the more fruitful parts of the country, if it be not by the river Pedee. which runs through all this inland part of North Carolina, and falls into the fea at Wineau (or Winyaw) which now belongs

to South Carolina, and for that reason it is neglected and never used by the other, which possesses the fruitful lands belonging to this port." From all which accounts it is extremely plain that these back parts of North Carolina are to be ranked among the finest in our colonies.

Notwithstanding these great advantages, there are very few people in North Carolina; this has been owing to feveral causes: there were obstructions in settling it, which occasioned some to leave the country, and a general idea was spread to its disadvantage; but the principal evil was the want of ports, of which there was not one good one in all North Carolina: the river Pedee falls into the sea at Winyaw, which is in South Carolina, and that has prevented an exportation of products from thence of the growth of North Carolina. And this want of good ports, and a trading town, has checked the culture of rice a good deal; but it has had another effect, which may probably prove a great advantage; it has driven the new fettlers back into the country, and thrown them very much into common hufbandry, on a foil and in a climate that will do for productions much more valuable than rice; these, such as filk, indigo, and

cotton are coming in by degrees, and will in a few years change the face of this colony entirely, and enrich it prodigiously; it is this spreading about the country that makes the produce of the woods almost the staple at present of the colony.

It is this circumstance that has thrown them into common husbandry, as I observed before; and it is this common husbandry which deserves our attention particularly, since in many respects it is different from that of any other part of Ame

rica.

The two great circumstances which give the farmers of North Carolina fuch a superiority over those of most other colonies, are, first, the plenty of land; and, fecondly, the vast herds of cattle kept by the planters. The want of ports, as I faid, kept numbers from fettling here, and this made the land of less value, consequently every fettler got large grants; and, falling to the business of breeding cattle, their herds became so great, that the profit from them alone is exceeding great. It is not an uncommon thing to see one man the master of from 300 to 1200, and even to 2000 cows, bulls, oxen, and young cattle; hogs also in prodigious numbers. Their ma-VOL. I. nagenagement is to let them run loose in the woods all day, and to bring them up at night by the found of a horn; fometimes, particularly in winter, they keep them during the night in inclosures, giving them a little food, and letting the cows and fows to the calves and pigs; this makes them come home the more regularly. Such herds of cattle and fwine are to be found in no other colonies; and when this is better fettled, they will not be so common here; for at present the woods are all in common, and people's property has no other boundary or distinction than marks cut in trees, so that the cattle have an unbounded range; but when the country becomes more cultivated, estates will be surrounded by enclosures, and consequently the numbers of cattle kept by the planters will be proportioned to their own lands only.

It may easily be supposed that these vast stocks of cattle might be of surprising confequence in the raising manure, were the planters as attentive as they ought to be to this essential object: they might by this means cultivate indigo and tobacco to greater advantage than their neighbours; some few make a good use of the advantage, but more of them are drawn from it by the

plenty

plenty of rich land, which they run over, as in the northern eolonies, till it is exhausted, and then take fresh, relying on such a change, instead of making the most of their manure, which would add infinitely to their profit.

Their system is to depend (where they have no navigation, and are at a considerable distance from it, which however is not the case in many parts) on the hides of their cattle, and on barrelled meat, with some corn, roots, and pitch and tar, &c. for the profit of their plantation; but the most bulky of these commodities yield but little, unless near some river; accordingly there are not many plantations at any distance from water, since it is not an inland navigation that is wanted in North Carolina, but ports at the mouths of the rivers that will admit of large ships.

The mode of common husbandry here is to break up a piece of wood land, a work very easily done, from the trees standing at good distances from each other; this they sow with Indian corn for several years successively, till it will yield large crops no longer: they get at first fourscore or an hundred bushel an acre, but fixty or seventy are common: when the land is pretty well exhausted they sow it with pease or beans one year, of

which

which they will get thirty or forty bushels per acre; and afterwards fow it with wheat for two or three years: it will yield good crops of this grain when it would bear Indian corn no longer, which shews how excellent the land must be. But let me remark that this culture of wheat to such advantage is only in the back part of the province, where the climate is far more temperate than on the coast; upon the latter it does not succeed well, a circumstance much deserving attention; for we may lay it down as a universal rule, that where wheat thrives well, there the climate is healthy, and agreeable to the generality of constitutions: it does well neither in extreme cold, nor in great heat.

In this fystem of crops they change the land as fast as it wears out, clearing fresh pieces of wood land, exhacting them in succession; after which they leave them to the spontaneous growth. It is not here as in the northern colonies, that weeds come first and then grass; the climate is so hot, that, except on the rich moist lands, any sort of grass is scarce; but the fallow in a few years becomes a forest, for no climate seems more congenial to the production of quick growing trees. If they planter does

not return to cultivate the land again, as may probably be the case, from the plenty of fresh, it presently becomes such a wood as the rest of the country is; and woods are here the pasture of the cattle, which is excellent for hogs, because they get quantities of mast and fruit; but for cattle is much inferior to pastures and meadows.

Besides these crops they cultivate all forts of roots, particularly potatoes, of which they get large crops; some they fell into Virginia, and the rest are given to their hogs. Fruit in none of the colonies is in greater plenty, or finer flavour; they have every fort that has been hitherto mentioned in this work: peaches, as in the central colonies, are fo plentiful, that the major part of the crop goes to the hogs. In a word, all the necessaries, and many of the luxuries of life abound in the back parts of this province, which, with the temperate climate, renders it one of the finest countries in America; so fine, that every body must be astonished at finding any settlements made on the unhealthy fea coast, which is nearly the reverse.

Respecting their staples, tobacco I have been so particular in treating of under the article Virginia and Maryland, that little remains to be said here, as the management of it is the same; the climate for this plant is not better than that of Virginia; but as there are more lands that are fresh, the crops will for some time be larger: four hogsheads have been made for a share here on a small plantation (near the northern forks of the river Pedee) for several years; and sive have been known for a season or two in the same plantation. Such crops, and even less, would well pay the expence of sloops taking the crop to the ships at sea which cannot come into port.

Rice is cultivated only in the maritime part of the province, in the swamps. As this article of husbandry is the grand staple of South Carolina, where infinitely greater quantities are made, I shall not enter into the process here: but observe, that the planters do not make so great a profit by this article as many do in South Carolina, which may be owing to the latter country being hotter, and perhaps the swamps are somewhat richer.

Pitch, tar, and turpentine are made throughout this province in vast quantities, which is a proof, among others, that the country is very far from being well settled

even

even yet. These commodities are the produce of that species of pine called the pitch pine; they are all made by different preparations from the refin of this tree. Turpentine is this resin or gum as it flows from the tree through holes cut for that purpose; the heat of the sun affists this extraction, and the operation is performed while the tree is growing. It is well known that oil of turpentine is a distillation of it. From the holes cut to gain the turpentine, little channels are made in the trees to conduct the refin down to the foot of them. where boxes or bowls are placed to receive it. After the oil is distilled from the turpentine, the residuum is the resin in a very thick confistence, which is dried, and then is in the lumps we have it in England.

Tar is the same gum, but gained in a different manner; the method is as follows. which I shall give in the words of an intelligent writer: " First, they prepare a circular floor of clay, declining a little towards the centre, from which there is laid a pipe of wood, extending, near horizontally, two feet without the circumference, and so let into the ground that its upper fide is near level with the floor: at the outer end of this pipe they dig a hole large enough to

hold the barrels for the tar, which when forced out of the wood naturally runs to the center of the floor as the lowest part, and from thence along the pipe into the barrels: these matters being first prepared, they raise upon that clay floor a large pile of dry pine wood split in pieces, and inclose the whole pile with a wall of earth, leaving only a little hole at the top, where the fire is to be kindled; and when that is done, fo that the inclosed wood begins to burst, the whole is stopped up with earth, to the end that there may not be any flame, but only heat sufficient to force the tar out of the wood, and make it run down to the floor: they temper the heat as they think proper, by thrusting a stick through the earth, and letting the air in at as many places as they find necessary. In order to gain pitch they boil the tar, and the folid part being separated in that operation, is the pitch." It is found much more profitable to apply the timber they cut down to this use than to faw it, or export it in any kind of lumber; and the tar &c. being far more valuable in proportion to bulk, is a circumstance of great importance in a country that does not abound with good ports.

To shew what the back part of this colony is capable of, I shall insert the account of the labour of ten negroes in one year upon the plantation on the Pedee abovementioned, premising that it is not to be taken as an annual product, this being an extraordinary year; the account does not contain all the circumstances I could wish, but as it is put into my hands, so I insert it.

Products raised and made by ten negroes in one year in the plantation.

	1.	100000000000000000000000000000000000000	d.
31 hogsheads of tobacco at 81. 58.	255	15	0
400 bushels of Indian corn and peafe at }	30	0	•
114 barrels of tar at 6s. 9d	38	9	3
Skins	8	10	0
Shingles 4000 at 12s. a 1000 -	2	8	0
£	335	2	3

which is 33l. 10s. per head, besides making corn and other provisions for the samily, cattle, poultry, &c. and keeping the buildings in repair.

Upon good fresh land this may often be equalled, but doubtless there are many tracts of country in which the negroes do not equal half this profit. But if the conduct of their husbandry was well looked into,

and their modes of culture minutely examined, the low products would be found oftner the refult of bad hufbandry than the fault of either foil or climate; it is fo in Britain, and doubtless in a much greater degree in America. It is however of confequence to know what in good years and on good land may be done in planting tobacco; we see here a product of 251. per head in that staple alone, besides the other articles of the plantation. This is a point at which emulation should strive to arrive; and spirited endeavours have a wonderful efficacy in gaining points; but planters, like farmers, are too often content to move on in the old line, without daring to think that a deviation can be beneficial.

The following are the exports from this province.

	£.
Rice, 2000 barrels at 40s.	4000
Tobacco, 2000 hogsheads at 81.	16,000
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 51,000 barrels at 78.	17,850
Boards, staves, joists, shingles, masts, and 2	
lumber S	15,000
Indian corn, peafe, and other grain, -	7,000
Live stock of different kinds -	5000
Skins of different kinds	5,500
경기 등 때 전환 경험을 하는 가게 되었다. 전환 전환 경험 전환 경험	

Total * 70,350

^{*} American Traveller, pag. 89.

But I must remark that this account does not at all agree with another which has been given on good authority; yet this account is drawn up for the years since the peace; and that which I am now going to insert, for the year 1753. The former ought to be much the greatest, instead of which it is the least.

	1.	s.	d.
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 84,012 bar-	29,404	4	0
Staves 762.330 at 41. 5 s. a 1000 -	3,230	0	0
Shingles, 2,500,000 at 11s. 5d. per 1000	1,427	I	0
Lumber, 2,000,647 feet at 51. per 1000	10,000	0	0
Corn, 61,580 bushels, suppose 2s	6,158	0	0
Pease, 10,000 bushels, 18. 6d	750	0	0
Pork and beef 3,300 barrels, 23s	3,795	0	0
30,000 deer skins *	5,500	0	0
Rice omitted, therefore taken from the other account	4000	0	0
Tobacco (ditto)	16,000	0	0
Besides wheat, bread, potatoes, bees-wax, tallow, candles, bacon, hogs-lard, some cotton, and a vast deal of squared walnut timber and cedar, and hoops and headings, also some indigo.			

Total † 80,264 5 0 There can be little doubt, from the number of articles omitted, but the total must amount to 100,000l. and it is well

^{*} The price by tale not known, the sum is therefore taken from the first account.

⁺ Account of European Settlements, vol. ii. p. 260.

known that this province is now making a great progress in its cultivation and exports: after being long neglected it was but little known, but fince the back country has been fettled, the planters have succeeded so well as to draw great numbers after them, fo that there is scarcely a part of America that is at present filling faster: the new colony on the Ohio will give a check to this; had not that been established. North Carolina must have soon become as flourishing as her want of ports would allow, which must ever keep her comparatively low. The country would thrive more if their husbandry was better, but, like all the American farmers, they are spoiled for good husbandmen by plenty of land.

Among the defects of their agriculture, I shall mention in the first place, their almost total neglect of inclosures; this they carry to a degree that is not even found in the provinces I have already described. Even their corn fields are open to the depredations of their own and others cattle; nor are the fences of their rice and tobacco grounds made with that care and attention which in England is bestowed on the least valuable fields. This circumstance, whereever it is found, is a fign of extreme bad

The system pursued here is as faulty as in most other parts of America; it consists in cropping the land with tobacco as long as it will bear it; then they will take two crops of maize, and after that throw in wheat, peas, &c. for several years longer; after which they leave the land to become forest again; as fast as they want more, they take it from the old woodland, serving it in the same manner. It is owing to this wretched system that many of their corn-fields are so full of weeds, that in some it is difficult to know what is the crop.

Even in the northern parts of the province, upon the frontiers of Virginia, where they give their principal attention to the little tobacco they cultivate, they do not manage it with any spirit; not being in several instances so good planters of that commodity as their neighbours. They do not

feem

feem so attentive to keeping the hillocks clean from weeds; this may be owing to the general circumstance of the planters not being fo rich, or having fuch large flocks of negroes; for in North Carolina it is but of late years that men of property have fettled in it; and they observe in America, aswell as in all other parts of the world, that the richer the cultivator, the better will the land be cultivated; whether the crop be tobacco, rice, corn, fugar, indigo, or whatever it may. In one respect, however, they have made an improvement in North Carolina in the tobacco culture. which is the introduction of a machine between the rows of tobacco instead of a plough, being between a plough and a harrow, and fomething in the nature of horsehoes used in England. It is not however a common tool there, but from its use, it is expected to become more general.

Another very great defect in their management, is the careless manner in which they conduct their cattle: immense herds are kept that yield a profit to the planters more inconsiderable than can at first be imagined; this is not for want of a market, since no commodity more readily yields its

price

price in North America, than beef and pork in barrels; and hides are every where a commodity eafily to be turned into money; but it is owing to a want of attention-to keeping a proper proportion of them to the winter food-to not fatting them well, and many not at all, which is owing to a want of pasturage, and also to leaving them too much to themselves in the woods without a fufficiency of attendants to watch and take care of them. The mere multiplication of cattle is not the only object, though it founds greatly; bringing them up in health and vigour, of a due fize and fatness, are as effential: but the stunted diminutive fize of all the cattle in North America, to the northward, as well as in the fouthern colonies, shews plainly the great want of pastures: cattle will live and multiply in their woods, but they will never be cattle of any value; and yielding a profit as inconsiderable as their worth.

In raising manure they are, notwithstanding their numerous herds, no less negligent. This is owing also to plenty of land; while they can get good crops of any thing on fresh land without dung, they care little about raising any; but with the advantage of fresh and good land, aided

by their numbers of cattle, they might very well make three and a half or four hogsheads of tobacco a share, which would be
281. or 321. a head, and, with lumber,
tar, corn, &c. would make their slaves on
an average worth at least 301. a-piece to
them, which would be a profit their neighbours very seldom reap.

As to the improvements which might be made in this colony, they are as great as in any other, if not more so, for it has been more neglected than most. What I should propose is, that the new settlers that came there should fix themselves in the very back part of all the country, upon the rivers that run among the Apalachian mountains, of which there are the Pedee with five confiderable branches, Cape Fear river, and others: some of these are navigable for middling fized boats above two hundred and fifty miles from the sea coast; and it is in this country, at the foot of the mountains, where the foil ranks among the richest in America, and where the climate is perfectly temperate, healthy, and agreeable. would not propose them to settle here to raise bulky commodities, because the navigation is not good enough to convey them away and because there are other territories bet-

ter

ter situated for them; but for indigo, silk, cotton, and some other valuable commodities, no fituation in all America exceeds this: here the soil is so fertile-so deep-and of fuch an excellent nature, that the products of indigo, &c. would be far greater than what is known in South Carolina; and these commodities are all so valuable, that very fmall boats would carry the amount of a great value. Indigo and cotton would here pay at least 251. a-head for all labouring hands, befides raifing necessaries for the support of the plantation: this would prove of greater advantage to the fettlers than any thing they could do with other products. The navigation of Virginia and Maryland, and the Ohio will give them a superiority in tobacco; and the same circumstance, with better swamps, and a hotter fun, will render South Carolina superior in rice; but in the commodities I have mentioned, the lands in queftion would have a yet greater superiority. Nobody disputes the excellence of the soil in the back parts of North Carolina; it excels that of South Carolina; and the climate is known to be equal to any in the world, being as different from the mari-Vol. I. time Aa

time parts of the continent, as much as Hudson's Bay varies from Jamaica.

This is an improvement which would much advance the interests of Britain, for indigo, cotton, and filk are commodities which she buys of foreigners at a great price; and if the had more than supplied the consumption of her own manufactures, they are articles of ready fale all over Europe, fo that nothing more demands the attention of the mother country than such parts of her colonies as are fitted by nature to produce them. Silk can only be produced in proportion to the number of people in the country; but then it is of confequence that the inhabitants of our wide. foread plantations should all make as much as they can. It is a common observation on this point of producing filk in the colonies, that the country is not populous enough to make any progress in a business . that requires fo many hands; but nothing can be more mistaken than such reasoning. The culture of filk is of that nature, that if there were only one folitary plantation in a whole province, the same quantity of filk might be made on it, as proportionably in a whole country, though ever fo popu-. lous:

lous; it is a bufiness that requires only a few weeks in a year, were it therefore otherwise, it could not answer to any one to meddle with it. Every person might make one or two pounds of filk annually with very little or no interruption of their usual occupations. Hence we may affert that nothing can be more abfurd than the argument of the inutility of filk because the country is not populous; when the country becomes populous the quantity will be an object of consequence; but if the work is not begun till then, it will probably never be begun at all: a few people in one colony, a few in another; fome thousands here, fome thousands there, separately taken, the quantity of filk they could make might not be a national object; but when all these numbers were added together, and united with the people in all the colonies, who enjoy a climate that would do for the business, the affair is then no longer a trifle: this we may be convinced of by reflecting on the numbers we have from Florida to Jersey inclusive; in all which tract filk might be produced in any quantities the population of the country would admit of: would but all the people in this line of country make each a pound per head, it A 2 2 would

3.56 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.
would supply Britain with all she uses, and
more, and be worth both to her and the
colonies, much above a million sterling per
annum.

It is upon this principle therefore that it ought to be recommended particularly to enter into the business of making silk, however thin the population; and especially in such excellent climates as the back parts of this province, at the foot of the mountains: for more than an hundred miles in breadth, quite among the mountains, the whole territory is covered with mulberry-trees; nature points out what might be done in this country, but if the industry of man will not co-operate, it is in vain to see these rich gifts on every side.

No part of America would be more proper for the growth of wine than this; but at present we know not of a navigation that would be sufficient for the cheap conveyance of it. Yet I should remark that the rivers in this country are not sufficiently known. Nothing is of more importance in the management of our American concerns than to know accurately how far the waters in that continent are navigable, and for what boats; surveys should

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 357 should be made of them with the greatest care possible: tracts of country may be neglected under a notion of the rivers not being navigable, while the fact may be quite otherwise. In the back and hilly parts of this province are numerous situations which would do admirably well for vineyards, the soil and climate equally promising success, and the wild vines every where sound in immense quantities. Nothing is supposed to be wanting but a navigation, which ought to be well enquired into.

Every reason of effect conspires to shew the propriety of fettling the back parts of this province in preference to the maritime ones; in the latter rice must be the staple, which is not wanted, fince it is the grand staple of South Carolina, where there are fwamps sufficient to raise more than they will ever be able to fell. Indigo they may cultivate, but the crop will be far inferior to those on the rich, deep, black land in the back country; and as to tobacco, the foil on the coast is not comparable to that on the Ohio, where the planters will rival them entirely, not to speak of the want of ports. At the same time that these points give such a great A a 3

In the next place let me recommend to the planters of North Carolina, whether living in the eastern or western part of the province, to pursue a better conduct relative to their cattle. Instead of keeping such vast herds of half-starved, stunted beasts, let them provide good pastures, and keep sewer beasts; the consequence of which will be, that five head will pay them better than twenty. In the very

backward parts of the colony they have good meadows and pastures, but these are where the fettlements are most scattered; and in all the rest of the country all the pastures the cattle have are the woods: this ought on every account to be remedied, so as to draw a greater profit from the stocks, and at the same time make them contribute largely to manuring the plantations, which at present they are far enough from doing. This good effect is only to be brought about by providing them pastures, as I said; in order to which the system of crops which I have so often condemned must be changed, and the land, when corn, &c. is no longer fown on it, must be left in sufficient order, and sown with grass seed, that good pastures may come in fuccession, instead of the land becoming forest again. There are forts of graffes indigenous in the country, which might be brought into culture, that would answer this purpose; but the readiest way to effect it would be to fow lucerne, which I before recommended to other colonies: the hotter the climate, the greater the necessity of employing this grass, or some one fimilar to it in the great length of the root, which penetrates fo deeply in the ground

Aa4

In England it has been found necessary to plant lucerne in rows, in order to keep it free from the natural grass, which otherwise soon choaks and destroys it; but in such climates as Carolina, the heat of the sun is such an enemy to the vegetation of grass, that none is to be found in the flat country but in rice swamps: this precaution therefore would be unnecessary, and it might be sown broad-cast with the last crop of corn, in the same manner as clover in England. This would (if properly introduced in the system) prove of wonderful utility

utility to the cattle, and be of more consequence to the planter than almost any other improvement. But I am aware that a North Carolina man would be apt to sow lucerne with the last crop of such a system as this:

escala. Cotton.

saosiaraO dan enc

- I. Tobacco.
- 2. Tobacco.
 - 3. Tobacco.
 - 4. Tobacco.
 - 5. Indian corn. andio Ond the
 - 6. Indian corn.
- 7. Wheat.
- - 9. Wheat.
- 10. Wheat.

In which case he must not expect it to prove the valuable plant I have mentioned: for such a system leaves the land a caput mortuum for some time, until the growth spontaneous to the country appears, which is wood of several kinds; and it is not to be expected that a crop of any value should grow after such treatment. But sucerne being to planters, circumstanced as the North Carolina ones, of great value, it would well deserve better treatment. Suppose the system begins with fresh woodland; it should be sown with the last crop

of some such system as this, in which I have partly allowed the planters to be bad husbandmen, as they all will be, till the luxuriance of the fresh land is a little tamed.

- I. Tobacco.
- 2. Tobacco.
- 3. Indigo.
- 4. Cotton. Consected Transaction
- 5. Wheat.
- 6. Cotton.
- 7. Indian corn.
- 8. Potatoes.
- q. Cotton.
- 10. Potatoes.

11. Oats, or Pease, and with it, Lucerne. In case cotton is not planted, some crop should be taken instead of it, that is not a great exhauster of the land. There are other roots which thrive well in the climate, as turneps, carrots, and several sorts of cabbages. These should certainly be introduced in the field culture, to yield food for the cattle in winter, which is as necessary as sucerne for the summer; since hay is to be had only in rice swamps cleared, or in the natural meadows near the mountains.

It is only in the introduction of such plants in their systems of crops that they can be able to keep their lands in tolerable heart, or vary their present bad husbandry: no land, however good, will bear such exhausting crops for ever, as tobacco, indigo, and corn; it must be exhausted, vary them how you will; but by introducing potatoes (which is a native plant to the Carolinas) turneps, carrots, cabbages, or other plants, for the winter food of cattle, the land would be kept fertile twice as long, and be in good heart when laid down to lucerne.

The present general management of the cattle I should adhere to, that is, to let them wander about the woods all day, and and keep them at home in the night, with only this variation, they should in the pens and folds be well fed both winter and summer, which at present is far enough from being the case. In summer lucerne should be mown and given green in racks; and in winter they should have roots or cabbages, or the hay of lucerne: and the hogs also well fed with roots or cabbages, and such offal as the plantation yields: the advantages of this conduct would be great, not only in the superior growth of the cattle,

and the larger quantity of produce yielded by them, but also in that article effential to all husbandry, dung: thus managed they would make much more dung, and of a quality far superior to that which the planters gain at present; for every farmer knows the difference between the dung of cattle well fed and that of cattle half starved: this would be a new assistant to them in keeping their fields in good heart, and would vastly increase the profit of their plantations.

This conduct would foon make a great change in the appearance of the country, and in its value; now almost as much returns to forest as is broken up, by the strange management they have of roaming from piece to piece, and touching none without ruining and exhausting it. What a great difference would it make, if when they took in a fresh piece of land, the old one was kept in value under lucerne, or some grass that would suit the climate. We should then see extensive and wide-spreading pastures of excellent herbage, instead of those numerous spots, which, having been under culture, and exhausted, lie absolutely barren for some

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 365 years, and then are covered gradually with weeds, bushes, and rubbish, among which forest-trees at last shoot up. This great change would make cattle as profitable to them as their staples, instead of keeping monstrous herds, which yield little or no produce. The planters should remember that in proportion as the country fettles, the woodlands diminish, and the number of their cattle must necesfarily fall off; then they would find the advantage strongly of keeping the land under good grass which they had had in culture: without this precaution, they will by and by, instead of boasting of a thousand or fifteen hundred head of cattle, with difficulty be able to keep a fourth of the number; and they will then be forced to the very culture of grass and other food for cattle as a neceffary; it will then be a difficult and expensive business to get good grass on land fo ruined and exhausted as their old

In carrying such ideas into execution, supposing it ever done, sences should be much more attended to than they are at present in North Carolina: it ought to be an universal rule, never departed from, to

plantations will be found.

bring

bring into culture no piece of ground without previously fencing it in a secure and lafting manner by a live hedge, bank, and There is no part of the world in ditch. which this can be done better than in Carolina, from the quick growth of wood in land not exhausted by planting: And these fences should not only be kept up while the land yields a crop, but afterwards when it is under grass or lucerne, that the fences may be secure enough to keep all cattle out, in order for mowing the crop to feed with at night. When the lucerne began to fail from age, or the planter wanted the land again for corn, &c. then he would find the fences prove of great utility. It is observable that under grafs or lucerne the land, if well laid down, and in heart, would continually improve in fertility until in some years it would prove highly profitable for a fresh system of crops.

There is no greater defect in the hufbandry of this province than the foulness of the crops with weeds, &c. the improvement in this case would follow of course from adopting a different system of crops,

as univerted role; never departed from to

as recommended above.

vo to more and and work of the state of the

I thould annue with van consecures those ted walds was stirve ton bloow I morly of

SOUTH CAROLINA

Climate of South Carolina-Productions-- Italisay prom arm Soil. a segapton to desay

with refined to near and epide than in THE province of South Carolina lies between lat. 31° and 35° N. but no idea is to be formed of the climate from that parallel, which in all other countries is found to be the finest on the globe; whereas this province experiences degrees of heat and cold rarely felt in other countries. This will appear from the following authentic account, faid to be written by governor Glen. "Our climate is various and uncertain, to fuch an extraordinary degree, that I fear not to affirm there are no people upon earth who I think can fuffer greater extremes of heat and cold; it is happy for us they are not of long duration. No idea of either one or the other can be formed from our latitude, which on other continents is found to be very defirable; nor dare I to trace by any physical reasoning the causes of these extremes, lest I should

I should amuse with vain conjectures those to whom I would not write any thing but truth; I shall therefore content myself with fetting down what we are fure of by experiments. In fummer the thermometer hath been known to rise to 98 degrees, and in winter to fall to 10 degrees. The weather perhaps is no where more variable, with respect to heat and cold, than in Carolina; the changes are frequent, sudden, and great; but the decreases of heat are always greater and more sudden than its increases. On the 10th of January, 1745, at two o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 70 degrees, but the next morning it was at only 15 degrees, which was the greatest and most sudden change that I have feen.

In summer the heat of the shaded air at two or three o'clock in the afternoon is frequently between 90 and 95 degrees; but such extremes of heat, being soon productive of thunder showers, are not of long duration. On the 14th, 15th, and 16th of June, 1738, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the thermometer was at 98 degrees, a heat equal to the greatest heat of the human body in health! I then applied a thermometer to my arm-pits, and it sunk one degree;

degree; but in my mouth and hands it continued at 98 degrees. Sixty-five degrees and a half may be called the temperate heat in Carolina, which exceeds 48 degrees, the temperate heat in England, more than that exceeds, 32 degrees, the freezing point. The mean heat of the shaded air, taken from the mean nocturnal heat, and from the mean heat at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, during the four seasons of the year, is as followeth: in spring 61 degrees, in fummer 78, in autumn 71, and in winter 52. The mean heat of the shaded air, at two or three o'clock in the afternoon, is 65 degrees in the spring, 82 in the summer, 75 in autumn, and 55 in winter. The mean nocturnal heat in those feasons is 57 degrees in the spring, 74 in the fummer, 68 in autumn, and 49 in winter. Therefore our winter's mean nocturnal heat exceeds the temperate heat in England.

"As the weather here is generally very ferene, the sun's rays exert more constantly their sull force; and therefore when we are abroad, and exposed to the sun, we are acted upon by a much greater degree of heat than that of the shaded air; for the thermometer, when suspended five feet Vol. I. Bb from

from the ground, and exposed to the sun and to reflected rays from our fandy streets. hath frequently risen in a few minutes from 15 to 26 degrees above what were at those times the degrees of heat in the shaded air. But I have never yet made that experiment when the heat of the shaded air was above 88 degrees; when therefore we are in the streets in a serene day in the fummer, the air we walk in and inspire is many degrees hotter than human blood; for supposing the heat of the shaded air be 88 degrees when the thermometer would rife 26 degrees higher if suspended and exposed to the fun, &c. as before mentioned; or suppose that the heat of the shaded air be 98 degrees when the thermometer would rife 26 degrees higher by fuch fuspension and exposure: in the first of those two cases, the heat of the air in the streets would exceed 98, the natural heat of the human blood, by 16 degrees; and in the last case it would exceed such heat by 26 degrees.

"The first instance of intense cold that I shall mention, relates to a healthy young person of my family, who at the time was two or three and twenty years of age, and usually slept in a room without a fire: that person

person carried two quart bottles of hot water to bed, which was of down, and covered with English blankets; the bottles were between the sheets, but in the morning they were both split to pieces, and the water folid lumps of ice. In the kitchen, where there was a fire, the water in a jar, in which was a large live eel, was frozen to the bottom: and I found feveral fmall birds frozen to death near my house; they could not have died for want of food, the frost having been but of one day's continuance. But an effect much to be regretted is, that it destroyed almost all the orange trees in the country; I lost above three hundred bearing trees; and an olive tree of fuch a prodigious fize, that I thought it proof against all weathers; it was near a foot and a half diameter in the trunk, and bore many bushels of excellent olives every year. This frost happened on the 7th of February, 1747."

Another account, written also by a perfon who resided long in Carolina, gives some other particulars deserving notice. "The air is more clear and pure here than in Britain, being seldom darkened with sogs; the dews hower are great, especially in the end of the summer, and be-

B b 2

ginning

ginning of the fall. The rains are heavy, but commonly short, and observe no parti-

cular season or time of the year.

" The winds are generally changeable and erratic, blowing from different points of the compass without any regularity; about the vernal and autumnal equinoxes they are commonly very boisterous; at other feafons are moderate. - The northerly winds are cold, dry, and healthy—they disperse fogs and mists, giving a clear skythe north-west is the coldest we have; it comes to us over an immense tract of land. and from the snow-capped Apalachian mountains; whenever it blows the air is cool, and in the winter it generally brings us frost, and often fnow: it is vulgarly and deservedly called the great physician of the country, as by its force it clears the air of the putrid autumnal effluvia; and by its coldness shuts up the pores of the earth, and of the trees, keeping in their vapours, the principal fources of the epidemics of the warm feafon. This refreshing, invigorating, and bracing wind is anxiously expected about the month of October by all, but by those particularly who have the misfortune to be afflicted with the more obstinate intermittents, to whom it generally

rally affords relief: the eafterly winds are always cool; from them we have our most refrething fummer showers; when they blow for any continuance they occasion coughs and catarrhal fevers. The fouth and fouth-west winds are warmest and most unhealthy; in whatever season they blow the air is foggy, and affects the breathing: in fummer they are fultry and fuffocating; an excessive dejection of spirits and debility of body are then an universal complaint; if this constitution lasts any confiderable time, hysterics, hypo, intermitting and remitting, putrid, flow, or nervous fevers are produced. This province is subject to frequent and dreadful tempests of thunder and lightning in May, June, July, and August."

From this account of the weather in South Carolina is to be drawn several important conclusions; that the maritime part of the country is in one of the most unhealthy climates in the world cannot be doubted. The heat rises to an extreme which is selt in very sew, if any places on the globe, of which accounts have been given: at the same time the changes to intense cold are so violent and sudden, that instances are to be met with no where but

in America, and not in that quarter to such a degree as in South Carolina. Now of all other circumstances of weather, there are none that are found fo infalubrious to the human constitution as such sudden changes, nor any which demands fo much caution in dress and living. Another point to be observed is, this immoderate and exceffive heat of climate is in a country, the major part of which is spread with stagnated waters of no depth, for such are the marshes, swamps, and all the rice grounds; from the mud of these stinking sinks and fewers the heat exhales such putrid effluvia, as must necessarily poison the air, and render it more fimilar to the Campania of Rome than any thing else an European can compare it to.

But at the same time that this character is perfectly just to the marshy sea coast, and generally to all the flat country, we must observe that it holds no further: this flat country reaches from eighty to a hundred miles from the sea coast, but then the soil begins to rise into little hills and beautiful inequalities, which continue increasing in height and variation till you reach the Apalachian mountains, at three hundred and three hundred and fifty miles

miles from the fea. In all this range of country the climate is nearly the reverse; they have neither those extremes of heat, nor the excess of cold that is felt on the coast. On the contrary, they have a charming, pleasant, and temperate climate, which in health and agreeableness yields to none in the world. This is to be attributed to the difference in the furface of the two countries; in one it is high, dry, and hilly; and wherever a country is of that fort, or rocky, let it be in whatever latitude it may, it is fure to be healthy; but the other is a flat, marshy tract, full every where of stagnant water; and this is throughout the world a never failing fign of an unhealthy air.

Hence therefore a distinction is to be made in every article that depends on climate between the eastern and western parts of this province: an inhabitant of Carolina may affert that country to be one of the most healthy and pleasant in the world, and nothing can be more true: an inhabitant of Carolina may affert that country to be in unhealthiness the fink of the earth; nothing more true: but let them explain; one will be found to live in the east of it, the other in the west; countries as different

almost as Iceland and Bengal. If it is asked, how it comes that any people will live in the flat country when the back parts are so superior; it must be attributed to two causes, the one is the contiguity to the ports and trade; the other, the necessity of swamps for cultivating their grand staple, rice; were it not for these it is to be supposed that all the inhabitants would slock backwards.

Relative to the products of South Carolina, it will be necessary to know them with tolerable precision, as they will mark the nature of the country better than any other circumstance. I shall begin with timber: the uncultivated parts of the province are one continued forest, with not much underwood. Among the trees are found oaks of feveral forts, viz. the chefnut oak, which is the largest in the province; some are three or four feet in diameter, and fixty feet high to the first bough: they grow chiefly in low land that is stiff and rich. Scarlet oak, used, as well as the former, in ship-building; it grows on dry land. Red oak grows fometimes very large and lofty, but is porous, and not durable; used for rails, staves, &c. Spanish oak, more durable, is used sometimes

in ship-building, and rives well into clapboards. Bastard Spanish oak, used for rails and clapboards. Black oak is durable under water, used also for building. White iron oak, very durable, is reckoned the best of all for ship-building; grows on dry lean land. Live oak, the most durable of all, but unfortunately affords not long plank clear of boughs. The weight and firmness of this wood is extraordinary; the particles have fuch an adhesion, that when a nail is once driven in, it is almost imposfible to draw it out again, it grows in fresh water ponds and swamps. Willow oak, so called from the near resemblance of the leaf to that of a willow: these are not all the forts of oak found in this province, there are several other varieties, but these are the principal distinctions: I must remark that all of them yield acorns, generally in plenty, and fome of them in immense quantities, that scarcely ever fail; and feveral of them that are as good for fwine as chefnuts, having a strong refemblance of that fruit; and they are in general much better food for hogs than our English acorns; and such as will not only keep hogs, but fat them admirably, without any expence to the planter. This is a great

great object to the Carolina people; for there is not a farmer or planter in the country who has not great stocks of hogs kept in the woods, and even fattened there.

Ash is a common tree here, but differing somewhat from that of England. Elm they have of two forts; one grows on the high lands, which resembles that of Britain; the other fort grows in low lands. Tulip trees grow to an immense fize; some of them have been found one and twenty feet in circumference, and some even ten feet in diameter; they have also a story current in Carolina, that a new fettler, not having a better habitation, took his abode for some time in a decayed tulip-tree, in which he had his bed and other furniture; yet this man, poor as he may feem from hence, lived to become a confiderable and wealthy planter. The use the wood of this tree is put to, is generally that of shingles, wainfcot, planks for buildings, and lasts longer under ground.

Beech is often met with, and grows to a large fize; it is very like that of Europe; the only use it is applied to in Carolina is for firing; it yields plenty of mast for swine. Hornbeam is common here. Saffafras is one of the articles of their exporta-

tion;

tion; it comes fometimes to a large fize. even to two feet diameter; they use it for turners ware, house-building, posts, and does well for all ground work. Dogwood is very plentiful, and generally found on light lands that are rich; they use it in building, where it is not exposed to the air. Laurel comes here to a great fize; fo that planks are fawn out of it, but it is not durable when exposed to the air: both bay and laurel grow principally in low fwampy ground. The red cedar grows chiefly on Swamps or fand banks; it is much valued for durability, and used for building sloops. boats, &c. as well as by the joiners; nor will the worm touch it for many years, and the floops built of it are esteemed for good White cedar is no less esteemed for other uses, particularly top masts, yards, booms, bowsprits, &c. and the best shinples are made of it.

The cyprus grows to an immense size, perhaps larger than any other tree in Carolina, both in respect of height and thickness; some have been sound of thirty-six seet in circumference. The Indians make their canoes of single cyprus-trees scooped out, and some of them have been thus made large enough to carry thirty barrels; and

others

others that are split down the bottom, and a piece added thereto, will carry eighty or an hundred.

The locust-tree is very durable, and will bear being exposed to the weather; it is never found in swamps or low places, being a general fign of dry, healthy, good land. They have four forts of pines here; the pitch pine grows to a great fize: I before mentioned this tree yielding tar, pitch, &c. The white pine they faw in various species of lumber; it makes also masts, yards, &c. the almond pine does also for masts. The dwarf pine is of no great account. The hiccory is a kind of walnut, the timber not all durable. The common walnut is called the black walnut, to diftinguish it from the hiccory; it affects good land, and grows therein to a vast fize: it is hard and durable. The maple is common here. The chinkapin is a fort of chefnut, and durable in the weather; it is used in building boats, shallops, &c. Birch grows on the banks of the rivers, high up the country, but feldom found on the Willows, fycamores, and hollies, coast. are found here. Three forts of mulberrytrees abound in Carolina, wherever the land

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 381 land is light; and rich shumac and hazel wood are also common.

In the next place we are to attend to the fruit-trees of this country, which are very numerous.

Among these we find the wild fig, which grows only on the mountains or their neighbourhood. The wild plums are of feveral forts; they are of quick growth, bearing in five years from the stone. They have a kind of currants, the bushes of which grow feven or eight feet high. Apples of various forts, and in great plenty. Three or four forts of pears. Three forts of quinces. the fruit of which is very large, and much beyond those of England. The least flip of this tree planted will bear in three years; a furprifing vegetation. Peaches are the most common fruit in the country, and no wonder, for every stone that falls becomes a bearing tree in three years; all are standards; the quantity of this fruit is fo great, that the hogs have much the larger share of it: they are generally fuch great bearers. that the branches of the trees are broken down with the weight of the fruit; they grow to the fize of common apple-

The apricot grows to a very great fize, exceeding most apple-trees; they are raised from the stone. Red and black cherries are found very plentifully. Gooseberries do not agree well with the climate, but common currants do well. Raspberries are plentiful. Strawberries thrive greatly, and bear amply. Native vines are met with all over the province; but the finest are in the back parts upon the dry hills, where they are five times as large as on the coast. From the native black grape, which does not ripen till October, wine has been made, of an excellent quality, and very strong; but the vineyards which have been tried of European grapes, have all failed from their ripening in August.

Besides these fruits, South Carolina produces others more valuable and sought after, as oranges, sweet and sour, lemons, citrons, limes, olives, pomegranates, all sorts of melons, water-melons, &c. Oranges and lemons are an article of exportation, great numbers being sent abroad annually. Olives are not cultivated in common, which is a neglect; though none of these fruits can be depended on, as in a country where no frosts are felt; whereas in Carolina, as before

fore remarked, they are fometimes fo fevere, as to kill all tender trees to the root.

In the kitchen garden are found every fort of useful plant that is commonly cultivated in the gardens in England. Potatoes no where thrive better, and they have them of several forts; many forts of peas and beans, with cabbages, broccoli, cauliflowers, &c. Some of these are in a persection which is unknown to us in Britain, owing to the superior heat of the climate; yet in general we should remark, that gardenfluff, which will grow at all in the cliclimate (fruits excepted) is preferable more to the north, in Maryland, Virginia, and the fouthern part of Pensylvania; but inthe back parts of Carolina, near the mountains, all these articles are yielded in a perfection that cannot be exceeded.

The products which respect husbandry in particular are Indian corn, which thrives very well here; wheat, which does well in the backward parts, but very badly in the maritime side of the province; barley the same; both these grain, as well as oats, are very little cultivated, nor can they be till the settlements reach surther back; beans and peas of several sorts, particularly

7

the Indian kinds, thrive well all over the province. As to the staples of rice, indigo, &c. I shall speak more particularly of them in another place.

The foil of Carolina must, like the climate, be divided before one can speak of it with any precision, into the eastern and western parts of the province; that is, the maritime part, and the back country; the former reaches above an hundred miles from the coast: this tract contains several kinds of land, which the planters distinguish by calling them pine land, oak land,

fwamps, and marshes.

Pine land is much the most general, containing perhaps sour-sists of the country; the soil is a dry white sand, covered with pines: if there is any underwood it is very poor, only the whortleberry and chinkapin, which Dr. Mitchel calls the beath of America. This land is very poor, and will bear scarcely any thing but its spontaneous growth; in spots it contains a little grass, but of so bad and sour a nature, that cattle will not touch it unless half starved. The writer I just now mentioned has an observation on this pine land, which deserves attention. "These pines with which all our southern colonies are covered for one

hundred or one hundred and fifty miles from the fea-coast, and in some all over them, are the most pernicious of all weeds; they not only destroy every thing upon the face of the earth, but the very land they grow upon; infomuch that nothing will grow among them, and hardly any thing after them. It is a general observation, that the lands are not only barren on which they grow naturally, but if they happen to come up on other lands, they spoil thens, and render them more or less barren. Having often examined what this could be owing to, I could not attribute it altogether to their large spreading roots, which spread all over the surface of the earth like a mat, and exhaust its substance, but chiefly to the strong acid juice of their leaves, which distills from them in the spring of the year like oil of turpentine, and poisons both the earth and every thing upon it; as it is well known that all acids are a poilon to vegetables, and all alcalies a rich manure. But whatever may be the cause, the matter of fact is certain, that nothing will grow among pines in America; and M. du Hamel makes the same observation in France. The whole surface of the earth is covered with their acid leaves; they over-Vol. I. Cc top

top and destroy every thing; and if a little grass should happen to come up among them where they grow thin, it is so scarce, vellow, and four, that to fee any beaft feed upon it, is a certain fign of the miserable poverty of a country, where they are reduced to the last extremity. Yet these are the only pastures they have in many of our colonies: what is worse, these pernicious weeds are not to be extirpated; they have a wing to their feed, which disperses it every where with the winds, like thiftles, and in two or three years forms a pine thicket, which nothing can pass through or live in. Thus the land becomes a perfect defart instead of a profitable pasture, in a few years after it is cleared. Corn upon such land looks as yellow as the turpentine with which it is fed, and grass will not grow." There is a great deal of truth and good sense in this passage; but at the same time it is not strictly true, that nothing will grow after these pines, for it is well known that the planters get Indian corn and peas from these lands after they are cleared; and when they lie low enough to be flooded, rice, But the principal use they are put to is for indigo, in which they answer tolerably; but this is only because they have no better that is dry; for indigo delights in dry, rich, deep, black mould. When you abuse their pine barrens, a Carolina planter will answer you by saying, that they do for their richest crop, indigo; which is very true, as I just observed; but they do for it only as poor sands in England do for the culture of wheat: the sarmers sow it because they have no better, and get half crops, which is just the case with indigo on pine barrens.

Oak land is another fort; it is a black, rich fand, and produces oaks, walnut, hiccory, and black mulberry-rrees, and is to all intents excellent land; but the misfortune is, that the quantity of it is very small; it is found only in narrow stripes between the swamps and pine barrens, and between the latter and creeks or rivers. This is the only land they have that will produce good

crops of corn and indigo.

Swamps are of several sorts, and they judge of them by their produce; the best are the white oak swamps, which have generally a clayey foundation; but these are rare in South Carolina, or else being on the large rivers are too deep to clear and drain. Others bear canes, and are therefore called cane swamps: these are generally rich and good; but the most general are cyprus Cc2 ones,

There can be no doubt but that all this maritime part of America has been covered with the sea, it has every sign of it; upon digging you find no clay, stones, rocks, nor minerals, it is all sand, or beds of shells; and the statness of the country, with the gradual shallowness of the sea, shew it sufficiently.

The varieties of land just given include all the maritime part of the province; but the back country, which reaches to the Apalachian mountains, is very different; swamps and marshes are there unknown, or at least but rarely met with, from whence

whence proceeds the healthiness of it. The face of the country is hilly, and either covered with tall stately trees, or spread into extensive meadows of dry, rich, deep land; which is the general nature of the foil, except where rocks abound, which is on the broken parts of some of the mountains, and on the banks of some of the rivers. Pines are in this part of the prowince feldom met with; on the contrary, the timber is oak, elm, hiccory, walnut, and mulberry: no lands in the fouthern part of North America have an appearance of being more fertile; and the most retired of our plantations, which are seated only where this fine country begins, find that one acre will yield as much produce of any kind as three in the maritime part of the province. The fresh wood lands here are deep, and black for two feet deep; fuch is the right land for indigo, tobacco, corn of all forts, and, in a word, for every thing that is fown upon it. This extraordinary fertility of the foil is united with a climate as mild, temperate, healthy, and agreeable, as that of the eastern part of Carolina is the reverse. It is the rice swamps that alone keep the inhabitants near the coast; the planters are accustomed to that culture, Cc 3 and

and will not change it for a different one: no rice is to be cultivated here, which is the circumstance that is the glory of the country: from this country it is that silk and wine must come, if ever they are had from Carolina.

It is the peculiar bleffing of these back tracts of country, that they have every product that is valuable, which is known in the maritime part of the province, except rice; and at the same time they are exempted from those of little or no use, or that are pernicious, such as the pine; a character we may fairly give it (notwithstanding its yielding tar, pitch, &c.) whenever it grows on land that could be applied to any other use.

This is the part of Carolina to which all new settlers should be recommended; here they will increase their numbers greatly from the healthiness of the country, which is not the case with the swamps and marshes on the coast. They may raise much better and more valuable staples than rice.

as that of the eastern part of Carolinais the

planters are accurbanted to that opline,

on it is the more formaps, shar stone

mak amol and modi movinos has a dranci

ries and the hearth

Staple productions—Rice—Culture of it— Management of the plantations—Profit— Indigo—Culture—Profit—Observations —Other staples—Remarks.

DICE is yet the grand staple production of South Carolina, and that for which the planters neglect the healthy, pleasant back country in order to live in the Difmals on the coast, for so the Americans justly call the swamps: rice can only be cultivated in land which lies fo low as to admit of floating at pleasure, and all such lands in Carolina are necessarily swamps. The first business is to drain the swamp, in which work they have no particular methods deserving notice, or which are unknown in England. The moment they have got the water off they attack the trees, which in fome fwamps are very numerous; these they cut down at the root, leaving the stumps in the earth, and, oftentimes even the trunks and branches of the trees are left about the ground: fome planters pile them up in heaps, and leave them to Cc4 rot:

rot; others, more provident, cut them into lengths, and convert them into some fort of lumber. However they do not wait for the ground being cleared of them, but proceed to plant their rice among the flumps. In March, April, and May they plant; the negroes draw furrows eighteen inches afunder, and about three inches deep, in which the seeds are sown; a peck is sufficient for an acre of land: as foon as planted they let in the water to a certain depth, which is, during the feafon of its growth, repeated, and drawn off feveral rimes; but most of the growth is while the water is eight, nine, or ten inches deep on the land. The great object of the culture is to keep the land clean from weeds, which is absolutely necessary, and the worst weed is grass: if they would fay a man is a bad manager, they do not observe such a person's plantation is not clean, or is weedy, but fuch a man is in the grafs; intimating that he has not negroes enough to keep his rice free from grass. This is the only object till it is reaped, which is usually about the latter end of August or beginning of September. Like wheat in England, they prefer cutting it while the fraw is a little green, leaving it on the stubble to dry and wither two or three

three days in case the weather is favourable; after which they lay it up in barns or stacks, in the same manner as corn in Europe.

The next operation, as in other forts of corn, is the threshing of it, after which it is winnowed, which was formerly a very tedious operation, but now much accelerated by the use of a wind-fan. When winnowed it is ground, to free the rice from the hulk; this is done in wooden mills of about two feet diameter: it is then winnowed again, and put into a mortar large enough to hold half a bushel, in which it is beat with a peffle by negroes, to free it from its thick skin; this is a very laborious work. In order to free it from the flour and dust made by this pounding, it is fifted; and again through another sieve, called a market sieve, which separates the broken and small rice, after which it is put up in barrels, and is ready for market.

The reader must observe upon this account that the cultivation of it is dreadful: for if a work could be imagined peculiarly unwholesome, and even fatal to health, it must be that of standing, like the negross, ancle, and even mid-leg deep in water, which floats an ouzy mud; and exposed all the while to a burning sun, which makes

the very air they breathe hotter than the human blood; these poor wretches are then in a furnace of stinking putrid effluvia: a more horrible employment can hardly be imagined, not far fhort of digging in Potofi. We are told indeed that South Carolina breeds more negroes than the destroys, which is certainly a fact, as appears by the annual exportation of a few; but then let it not be imagined that it is in these properly denominated dismals? we are to remember that the proportion between the domestic and other negroes and planting ones, is as 30,000 to 40,000, when . the total is 70,000; and we are further to remember, that many are employed on indigo where there are no rice swamps, and alfo in other branches of culture; all these with the 30,000, may certainly increase greatly; but it does not from hence follow that those employed on rice do not decrease confiderably, which is a certain fact, and it would be miraculous were it otherwise. It will therefore be no impropriety to determine that there must be a considerable expence in recruiting those negroes that are employed on rice; and more confiderable far than what attends others employwhile to a borning fun, which makes

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. 395 ed on tobacco, indigo, or indeed any plant

not cultivated in a swamp.

As to the product of rice, it varies much, which is in proportion to the goodness of the fwamp, and to the culture that is bestowed on it; the land it likes is the stiff, deep, miry mud on clay; the worst is the swamp with only a fandy bottom. Governor Glen observes that thirty slaves are a proper number for a plantation, and to be attended by one overfeer. The common computation throughout the province is, communibus annis, that each working hand employed in a rice plantation, makes four barrels and a half of rice, each barrel weighing four or five hundred pounds weight neat; besides a sufficient quantity of provisions of all kinds for the slaves, horses, cattle, and poultry of the plantation for the year ensuing; the price 6s. 5d. per 100lb. or from 11. 5 s. to 11. 12 s. per barrel; but fince this gentleman wrote, the price has rifen to 2 l. and 41. per barrel. We are told in an account written in 1710. that the product was from 30 to 60 bushels; suppose 40, and that a bushel weighed 65lb. at 450lb. a barrel this would be 53 to the acre; and at 21, the amount would be rol. 15 s. at and galhodos tod tod and

The first account of 4½ barrels at 21. is 91. per working hand, at the price rice is at present. A late account of Carolina, published in 1770, makes the labour of the slaves 101. each; these agree therefore very well. But Dr. Stork makes the profit per bead 201. by this culture, and says that where the soil and climate are proper for rice, there is no grain in the world yields so much profit to the planter; this is evidently a mistake, and a great one. If we allow 101. a head upon the former, and better authority, we cannot be far from the truth. I before calculated the annual expence of negroes as follows:

Mgiaw shadon instance ovid to the	s. d.
Overfeer and san training and I	0 9
Cloaths south standard to 18	10 0
Sandries oute od it gulung bat	10 0
rad (b) (10 price price (a) (d) per	जन्दलाक

Soon is it of the front of the set out

But the decline of value must be in all reafon reckoned in rice work; if 21, the expences will be 71, and the produce but 101, so the planter's profit per head will be only 31, from which must be farther deducted the interest of his cost, or 501, which at 5 per cent. (not reckoning the rate per cent.

of the colonies) come to 21. 10s. and leaves neat from the flave ol. 10s. But as this would by no means pay the planter for his other expences and his time, he makes a shift to save something in the articles of overfeer and cloathing; but still the product from rice alone would be insufficient: the method in which they make it up is partly by lumber, as the flave will have time in the winter to thresh and dress more rice than he can plant in the fummer; and confequently can spare it for sawing lumber. But yet rice would not answer were it not for other affishance; this is chiefly indigo. I before remarked that between the pine barrens and swamps are dry slips of oak land, which is rich and good; on this they plant indigo, and to good profit, with this further advantage, that indigo requiring no winter work, the flaves may affift in manufacturing rice, and fawing lumber, &c. Upon this plan indigo is extremely profitable, but for want of enough of it, they plant it likewise on the pine barren, where it is but little better than rice. It is this fecondary object of the rice planters which makes their bufiness advantageous enough to support them; but upon on converged whis

398 AMERICAN HUSBANDRY.
this circumstance I must make a few observations.

What can induce them to have any thing to do with an article of culture, which, taken fingly, would not even pay charges? That this is the fact is not to be disputed, for we have the produce per working hand from the best authority, the governor of the province, who resided in it many years; and let any person judge if a negroe can stand in less than 71. or 81. a year in so pernicious an employment as that of making rice. And it is also clear enough that the wear of tools, buildings, charges, incidents, interest of other money, &c. &c. must likewise come to something considerable.

What therefore I say can induce the planters to engage in such a business?

Possibly it is owing to habit, and being accustomed to consider rice as their grand dependance, which it was to their fathers before indigo, silk, cotton, &c. were known here; and having been used to this idea, they find it difficult, like all cultivators of the soil, to change old customs. If it is not owing to this, it is difficult to say to what it can be owing. In the back country of the province the land is of infinitely greater

greater fertility, and would produce much more valuable staples, at the same time that the healthiness of the climate would both to the planter and his family, as well as his slaves, be invaluable: their being so much addicted therefore to rice, is sounded on no

good and substantial reasons.

There is another circumstance which should make the government attentive to encouraging every staple, but particularly indigo, tobacco, filk, wine, &c. more than rice, which is its being a rival to one of the most valuable articles of our trade, that of corn; for all the rice fold to Spain and Portugal is but enabling them to do without so much of our wheat; and that is partly the case with Germany: not that I would infinuate that restrictions on rice should be laid, for obvious reasons, and particularly, the not knowing whether we can supply those markets with corn, supposing they would take it of us-and also the value of the rice being all laid out in British commodities. But indigo, tobacco, &c. have all the same advantages without any disadvantages, nor even the appearance of any. doin'w ment of aboveb a

den them very unfit to produce lach a circl

dien socion bluck bas?

INDIGO.

There are three forts of indigo cultivated in South Carolina-the Hispaniola, the Babama, which is a false Guatimala, and the native; the two first are the most valuable. but the last is much better adapted to the climate. The former is an annual plant, but the wild fort, which is common in the country, is perennial; its stalk dies every year, but it shoots up again next spring; the indigo made from it is of as good a quality as the other, the superiority of that being owing to the superior fertility of the West Indies, and a better climate for it. Dr. Mitchel reckons Carolina to have a great inferiority to the West Indies in this article: his words are, "Indigo thrives very indifferently either in the foil or the climate. Indigo is one of those rank weeds like tobacco, which not only exhaust the substance of the earth, but require the very best and richest lands, and such as have a natural moisture in them: whereas the lands inCarolina are extremely poor and fandy, and have a barren dryness in them, which renders them very unfit to produce fuch a crop as this to any manner of advantage. This

is planted by the French on the fresh woodlands of St. Domingo, which are too rich and moist even for sugar, and is intended to exhaust their luxuriant fertility, as we do with tobacco, in order to render them fit for that and other crops. They likewife cut it every fix weeks, or eight times a year, and for two years together; whereas in Carolina it is cut but thrice : and as the land has not substance and moisture to make it shoot after cutting, and the summers are too fhort, the third cutting is but of little value, as even the second is in Virginia. Neither does the foil or climate feem to be fit to yield that rich juice which makes this dye in any plenty or perfection. The French and Spaniards make great quantities worth eight and ten shillings a pound, when the little we make in Carolina is not upon an average worth above two shillings, and a great deal has been fold for a shilling and lefs."

The proper soil for indigo is a rich, light, black mould, such as is commonly sound in the back country; but in the maritime part they chuse oak land for it, not having the other; and as this is but in small quantity, they are forced to cultivate their poor Vol. I. D d white

white fands for indigo, which will not yield near the produce which all cultivators of this commodity ought to be defirous of, and indeed which will always be gained when proper land is employed for it. The deficiency of common products appears from governor Glen's account, who afferts, that 30 lb. an acre is all that is to be expected in common, though good land will produce 80.

Respecting this point of produce, our accounts differ greatly, and none yet in print are fully to be depended on; Mr. Glen's account is, that one acre of good land will produce 80 lb. and one flave may manage two acres and upwards, and raife provisions besides, and have all the winter months to faw lumber, and be otherwise employed: 80 lb. at 3 s. the present price, is 12 l. per acre; and 21 acres at that rate amount to 30 l. per slave, befides lumber, which is very confiderable: but I should observe, that there is much indigo brought now from Carolina, which fells in London for from 5 s. to 8 s. a pound, and some even higher, though the chief part of the crop may not yield more than 3s. or 4s. this will alter the average price;

price; but how much, is almost impossible to ascertain, as it depends on many un-known circumstances.

Before I quit this subject, I shall, in order to give the reader all the fatisfaction possible, transcribe part of an account of the indigo culture, written in 1755, before the province had got so largely into the management of it as it has done fince. "Whoever plants indigo must be careful to have a good command of water in his reservoirs, which if in the center of his field, the better, to fave time in bringing the plant when cut to the vats. We plant two kinds of land in Carolina, viz. high land and low land. The first is of the richest kind, overgrown with oak or hiccory, in which the plant will strike its roots very firait and deep. The fecond is either our river or inland swamps, where we plant rice, which lands are generally covered with huge oaks and cypresses; so that to gain a field of twenty acres in this country, as many noble trees must be felled and burnt, as in England would bring many thousands sterling.

"This low land is banked, ditched. trenched, and drained; but the foil must lie on a clay bottom, otherwise indigo will not thrive in it. In those lands the indigo roots spread horizontally, as in the high lands perpendicularly."-This idea of our author seems contradictory to the best accounts I have received, which confine the culture of indigo to hiccory land and pine barren, as it requires a dry foil, though as fertile as possible, and consequently a swamp must be well drained indeed to be rendered proper for it: but what he fays himself shews that the high land is the best for it, fince all plants that strike a perpendicular root ought to be planted in a foil that will admit such roots shooting: a perpendicufar root spreading horizontally, proves clearby that the foil is improper; it meets with the wet retained by the clay, which prevents its running deeper. His fituation, within forty miles of Charles Town, prevented him, I suppose, from mentioning the deep black loams of the back country, which are the only ones that will yield great crops of indigo. But to return,

" If the planter prefer the quality before the quantity of his indigo, he will be very careful to let his plants but just bloffom before he cuts: for the more young and tender the plant, the more beautiful will be the colour of the indigo, though it will not yield perhaps so much as if cut a week or two later: but what he loses one way he will gain another. On the contrary, if he lets his plants be overgrown, and stand too long, he never can expect bright indigo. Indigo has a very difagreeable fmell, while making and curing; and the faces, when taken out of the steeper, if not immediately buried in the ground (for which it is excellent manure) breeds incredible fwarms of flies.

"The quality of indigo, when made, may be known by its brightness, closeness, and fine violet blue, inclining to copper. It is better by being kept some time, and ought to be light enough to swim on the water; the quicker and more it sinks, the worse its property. The very best and finest is of a fine lively blue, inclining to the violet; brilliant, of a fine shining colour when broke, and more beautiful within than without. A bushel of good indigo D d 2 weighs

Our indigo making ceases with the fummer. As foon as cold weather fets in. little or no fermentation can be excited. Double beating and labour is required; and in drying the indigo the cakes will break into powder. The first frosty night concludes our feafon, bai to valorio adT "

may be known by its brighted (s, closenesand fine violet blue, incluing to copper. It is better by being kept fome time, and ought to be light enough to fwim on the water; the quicker and more it finks, the worfe its projecty. The very bell and fingit is by finer lively blue, and inthe to the violet a bibliont, of a ppc (higherte lour when broke and more beautiful with-

ogibni boog to tothen A trendity Expence

Weighs

Expence of purchasing a plantation in Carolina within 40 miles of Charles Town.

of the state of th
To 1000 acres of land (one third of which
ought to be good swamp, the rest oak and hiccory, with some pine barren, at 575 00
118.5d.
To a dwelling house, barn, stable, overseer's } 142 15 0
To two valuable negroes, (a cooper and a 142 15 0
To 26 other negroes, (two thirds men and one third women) at 351. 10s.
To two ordinary old negroes to look after } 57 00
To a waiting boy, 28 10 0
To a house-wench, 40 15 0
To 20 head of oxen, cows, &c. at 11. 8s. 28 0 0
To 2 stallions and 4 breeding mares, at 51. 14s. 11 8 0
To hogs, sheep, and poultry, - 21 8 0 To plantation tools, a cart, plough, &c. 21 8 0
To 2 riding horses for yourself, family, over- feer, bridles, faddles, &c 28 00
To cloaths, provisions, &c. for negroes, 35 15 0
To contingencies, nails, oil, &c 15 15 0
£. 2075 1910

The plantation per ann. after the first year.

N. B. This calculation is for good years, and
exclusive of accidents.

To the overfeer's wages, and allowance for rum, &c. To 32 pair of shoes for negroes, at 2s. 6d.	35 15 0
To 32 pair of shoes for negroes, at 2s. 6d. To 160 yards of white plains (5 yards each negro) at 1s. 5d.	3 00
Dd4	. 50 18

A CONTRACTOR OF A CONTRACTOR O
Brought forward 50 1 8 To thread, buttons, &c.00 big one third of 32 blankets given every
To phylic for each negro, as per agreement 3 3170
To Olnabrug, lime, oil, nails, and iron ware, 8 13 6 To freight and cooperage of 50 barrels of rice, at as rod. 200 for at 28 10 for a 20
To taxlef 32 flaves, about a wood - are - are 4 4 o To purebase of two slaves annually, to keep and a such up the original stock, which it is judged 71 5 o arthisand their sincrease may do, and to support
or ote tribey secken that the false bushing ad-
pringed and taken proper care of keep up there with numbers with any new purchase
By the produce of 60 acres of indigo at 50 lb. per acre, at 25, 20 db. per acre, at 25, 20 db. per db. or 7l. 1s. 8d, per acre, By 50 barrels of rice, on 25 acres, each bar- rel scolb. net, at 6s. per cwt. 3, 13, 6 By 50 barrels, 3, 13, 6
only seementy is not only in point despringed
Balance, planter's profit induction of 1885 of
mily refides on the spot, and that the sur-
plus of hogs, poultry, &c. raised above their own consumption, will be sufficient
to find the family in butchers meat, and other necessaries, save cloathing.
This

"This computation is made of two acres of indigo and one of rice to each hand; they raise their own provisions befides.

"If rice is not planted, some of the hands may be employed in the winter season in making naval stores, cutting of lum-

ber, shingles, &cc." *.

There are some valuable particulars in this account: but in others it is either erroneous, or does not hold good at present, when they reckon that the flaves, well appointed and taken proper care of, keep up their own numbers with any new purchase, which indeed appears from Carolina genenerally exporting a few. As to the rice, if 66l. in gool. with a loss of lumber, is all the recompence for fixing in the low fwampy country, it shews at once how just my former observations were, that the back country is not only in point of health and agreeableness infinitely superior to any thing within forty miles of Charles Town, but also by far the most profitable to the planter. The foil is there greatly superior for every production except rice; this fuperiority would alone more than equal the

^{*} Gent. Mag. Vol. xxv. p. 258,

amount of 661. befides the product of lumber. All the accounts we have had of this country only confirm the truth of the general observation, that the back country is that to settle. betall too si soil it.

Befides, rice and indigo, there are fome other staples cultivated in Carolina, which though not of any great importance, yet demand a little attention. Cotton thrives well in the foil and climate, and though it is applied at prefent only to the home consumption of the province, yet it might certainly be extended to as to become a confiderable article of exportation. Indigo and rice at present engross all their attention, not because they cannot raise other staples, but because these, while the demand is great, are more profitable. Cotton will hereafter be a valuable staple. Wine, filk, oil, hemp, and flax, are other products, which in the back country may be cultivated in the greatest plenty; but this is not to be expected, till the value of that healthy and fertile part of our fouthern colonies is better known and peopled.

It is an observation that demands much national attention, that this very important colony should cultivate more staples than rice and indigo; it is of consequence

arpount

that our colonies should not depend on one or two staples which are not of a permanent nature : indigo is the only article that ranks among the staples of South Carolina, which is secure of a future sale, proportioned to the future increase of culture: I do not think that this is the case with rice, the fale of which depends very minutely on the plenty of corn in Germany, the North, Spain, and Portugal; for in those countries is its principal sale, and the immense growth of the rice plantations in Carolina has of late years been much owing to a great failure in the corn crops of Europe, a failure which has been and is at present likely to prove of no flight advantage to this colony, with a relate bank : white

But filk, wine, oil, hemp, flax; &cc. not forgetting tobacco, would, if well attended to in the back country, secure to this province those advantages which can only flow from the possession of various staples in common demand throughout the world; by which means, their profit would be greater than at present, and under the security of a much longer duration than will ever be found attendant on the exportation of riceral ordinario al Machanistical presidentes

Besides these articles, which are at prefent cultivated in large or small quantities, . (it is to be observed that every one of the products here mentioned are planted for private use, and in some in small quantities for fale) there are others which deferve mention; among these we find an exportation of the fame fruits which are fent from Spain and Portugal, oranges, lemons, citrons, &c. pitch, tar, turpentine, rofin; naval timber, pot-afh, faffafras, lumber, tallow, wax, teather, fkins, &c. Thefe are articles which demand attention, and for which all endeayours should be tried to increase, fince it is a number of staples upon which a flourishing colony depends for any permanency of profperity: and this is the more necessary, as in proportion as the fettlements extend, in fuch proportion does the benefit of lumber fall off; fince the cleaning the woods pays the expence in lumber only in the maritime part of the province; now in plantations which are deprived of the advantage of lumber, there must accrue a certain loss, if a variety of staples be not introduced. Indigo and tobacco employ only the negroes the summer half of the year, and leave time sufficient for filk in the spring,

an

an harvest in summer, and a vintage in autumn, besides the winter for other purposes, and completing the labour of other staples.

This object deserves the more attention, from the circumstance of the eagerness of the Carolina planters in the culture of their grand staples, rice and indigo, which is carried on to fuch a degree, as to render them little solicitous about other objects. Herein they confult what we are to look for from all mankind, great attention to what they think their present interests, and very little idea of futurity; this disposition which is fo general among all people, does very well for the present time, and for present interests, but it will rarely, if ever, bring in those improvements, which, in the introduction of new staples, become, in future, objects of the greatest importance. It is in such points as these that the attention of government is wanted, which can alone effect such material improvements, by bringing people to an attention to other objects, besides their immediate interests, by rewards and other encouragement.

The administration of our government has in these instances shewn too great an inattention to such important objects; our colonies

colonies have increased greatly in population and product, which has satisfied us, although the benefits received might have been greatly increased, and been of such a nature, as to promise a much longer and more secure duration than what they enjoy at present.

ried on to fuel, a degree, as to conder them have to high MXX box of o'Acr H o'S. Here-

crand daples area and indigo, which line of-

Account of the means, expence, and profit of forming a plantation in South Carolina— Explanations—Remarks.

SOUTH Carolina has of late years increased in a most prodigious degree, both in people and the exportation of valuable staples, which has been owing to several causes I shall mention hereaster; and this great increase, with the fortunes made by planting in this part of the continent, have induced very great numbers to settle in this province, and it is much to the advantage of Great Britain that this is so; for in all these provinces to the south, valuable staples are produced, which enable the inhabitants to purchase the manufactures of Britain, a case not to be met with in

the northern settlements: for this reason it is highly expedient, that the profit accruing from agriculture in this province be well understood, that all those persons who are in doubt which part of America they should go to, may be induced to make choice of those colonies which produce staples for Britain; among which South Carolina singures greatly.

A calculation drawn from actual experience of the expences, produce, and profit of a considerable plantation in this province.

monthly the state of the same of	1.	s.	d.
Freight and expences of fix persons in one family, from London to Charles Town, at 251.	150	0	0
Freight of 10 tons, at 40s	20	0	0
A couple of riding horses,	40	0	0
Expences in fearthing for a plantation,	40	0	0
Patent fees of 10,000 acres,	62	10	0
Building a house,	200	0	0
offices, rice barns, &c.	700	0	0
tobacco-houfe,	20	0	0
faw mill,	500	0	0
Furniture,	150	0	0
A canoe,	50	0	0
Boats, - daying - ba and again man	30	0	0
Year's house keeping,	120	0	0
Implements of culture,	200	0	0
20 horses at 51.	100	0	0
100 cows at 30s	150	0	0
Swine, 4	20	0	0
Poultry,	5	0	0
Carried over	2557	TO	0

	70.5	1.1	AND AND AND	22 t. A
ANA 164 YAY YA				1. s. d.
Wear and tear of imp	lement	s,	101 44	d, 2557 10 0
Sundry labour ex	clufic	e of	negro	es.
On cattle,	Ame	15	00	icidy monet
100 acres of wheat at		100	00	Broket College
40 acres of oats at 16s	•	32	00	
10 potatoes at 40s.	Yeby	20		
Making hay,	ug 🖘	20	Marie Marie Control	
Orchard and garden, Sundries,	1,335		00	anno autolia.
		30	00	Torre and the land
40 negroes at 50l.				232 0 0 2000 0 0
10 0 .00 k . 501	5.00 A # C. (S			2000 0 0
				implements -
o c look Exp	ences	on a	mo.	A WHITE
AL 167				facticates.
Overleer,	1800	I	00	- Hamble L
Cloaths	43		00	
Sundry expences, Province tax,	SET 1		30	A spirit service in
		_	3.0	
0 1 000		2	13 0-	86 0 0
	Seed	1		
T call	Gin	1 10	DOMO:	
100 acres of wheat, a	t Ss.	40	00	Week
40 onts 80 -	-	16		to bulk some gam was
10 potatoes 8s	-/	4	00	lu llim wal A
		1010)	h.	60 00
Taxes; a quit-rent o	f 2s. p			10 0 0
		124 \$1	. 42.7	Carre
T			3	4965 10 0
Two year's interest at	5 per	cent.	· 在京本中	490 10 0
CONTRACTOR OF THE	- A			5462 10 0
	Cic/2	-		3402 TO TO
Interest, -	-	-	ē	273 10 0
334				Charles And Andrews
				D
6 1960 00				Pro-

eren undall

the threshold

HUSBANDEY	MAG	ISS	MA	ði »
AMERICAN H	USBA	NDR	#A	417.
Produce of	lecond	year	act legs	W car
100 acres of wheat, 20 bulb			THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF	s. d.
40 negroes at 13l.			600	00

Third year.

0.0 0

Expences.

0 1 170 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0	a dipabaté f
Taxes as before,	10 00
Repairs of buildings,	90 00
House-keeping,	100 00
Implements 4 - 2	40 00
Labourgod	200 0 0
Incidenti,	50 00
Interest,	272 1 0
Freight of products to shipping,	80 000
Expences on 40 negroes at 21. 138.	86 00
n o constant Profile the state of	The ESPON SCHOOL STATE
po for a later to the second	. 889 10
· Commence of the comment of the com	

Produce of third Year.

Wheat, - c	Jan diago.	300 00
A faw-mill of 7 fav	rs will cut	40 potatoes %
yeek, at 6s. per 15l. per week, wl annum,	nich is per	bio moce toward
Deduct labour, repair and fundries,	rs, freight 280 0	Harata Patest on E
Remains -	500 0	o eschil
But fay		6 66
0 4 dosi).		£. 1300 0 0
Vol. I.	E e	Fourth

	F			ad W
O A COLOR OF MARK	Expences.		(many	
0 000		48.5		s. d.
Taxes,	• **	• :		0.0
Repairs of buildings,		• 1	50	00
House-keeping,		•	100	00
Implements,	STERV BENG		40	00
Labour, -	dia cari	•	200	
Incidents, -	100000000000000000000000000000000000000		50	
Interest -		•	273	
Freight, -			80	00
15 negroes at 501.		• 110		00
Expences on 55 ditto	at 21. 13s.	•	145	15 0
0 0 000	Part Sign State	ſ	1698	ETOS PART TOTAL
0 0 03		~		
	Produce.		القيدان	. Krobin
0 0 0 0 0 0	- Sundden			5,431
Wheat,	• •			00
40 negroes at 251.	•	- 4	1000	
15 ditto at 201.		•	300	00
	NAME AND DESCRIPTIONS	£.	1600	00
e los - 1	Fifth year.			
		dec		allen.
	Expences.	awil-ray	politica-l	
Taxes,	Title abu	cal titled.	MINES	
Buildings,	Mil A Most Co		10	
House-keeping,	tog a tilo	Line Hele	16 50	00
Implements, -			7. 83 (25)	STATE SAME
Labour,	at I region a		200	00
Incidents, -	A .		The state of the state of	BESTER SWILL
Interest, -	Andrew Control of the		53	
Freight, -		-	273	10
10 negroes,			500	
65 ditto at 21. 13s.			172	50
0 0 0001 1				
		£.	1508	60

AMERIC	AN HUSBAN	DRY.	419
YADRY.	Produce.	AME	418
	Fourth year.	1.	s. d.
Wheat, -		300	
\$5 negroes at 251.	- Lixpences	1375	00
fo at 20l.		200	00
Saved last year,	• 1		00
o o o o o	10,50		6-1-711 y
1400 0401		£ 2175	COLL OF
20 000	0.00		0.00
- 50 00	Sixth year.	2011	tions.
0 1 1/2	Expences.	- , fo	a see L
Taxebar -		die	J. 1.512
Buildings,	- 20 1 10 to make	2.50	0,0
House-keeping,		- 100	00
Implements,		- 40	0 0
Labour, -	•		00
Incidents, -	Produce	- 53	
Freights -		273	0.0
25 negroes at 50l.	1	1 12 1250	
90 ditto at 21. 138		238	10 0
Manager and an observe	· Empercess		
0.00 000 J -		£. 2354	11 0
	Produce.	eggs. - Neceptags.	bluce.
Wheat, -	rask mater	- 300	
Cattle (supposed by	this time to bring is	n)	rode.
a regular profit,		3 .00	00
os negroes at 251.		1623	00
of our		300	
0.0 0.0		£. 2525	
- 200 0		2, -3-3	-
0.90856112 - 7 6	Seventh year.	.8.0	
0 1 5 1 5	Expences.		101
Taxes, ?	Limpensess	100100	.00
Buildings,		- 14 50	
over " sob o o	E e 2 Carried o	ver £. 60	0,0

		1. 1. 1.		
.3	oubor't	L. C.	l.	s. d.
white characteristics	Droug	ht forwa		00
House-keeping,	Α.		100	00
Implements,		2.55	200	00
Incidents		4	53	00
Intereft,			273	10
Freight,		-	140	00
30 negroes at 501.			1500	00
120 ditte at 21. 135.			318	00
AL.		£.	2684	10
c o ot P	roduce.			esta T
Wheat,		_	300	00
Cattle,		- e 8	100	oa
on negroes at 251.	•	-	2250	00
30 ditto at 20k	•	•	600	00
01 000		£	. 3250	00
Eigl	ith yea	r. 102	in sality	en es es ese
Ex	pences.		a constitution	
Taxes,		-	10	00
Buildings, -			50	00
House-keeping,	Dubua'i	•	100	00
Implements,		• .	40	00
Labour, - i said	o taking	die 🖈 by	200	0.0
Incidents, -	•	. dile	53	00
Interest.	•	-157	273	10
Freight,		•	180	00
36 negroes at 50l.	an Arton		1.800	00
156 ditto at 21. 135.	•		413	8 0
1763	y dansy	£.	3119	90
P	rodace.	. /		
Wheat,			- 300	0 0
Cathle,	•	•	100	0.0
c. 5 up . \ 1999 being.	Carrie	d over	£. 400	0 6

			1	
AWTER	AN HU	CR A NOTA	ner A	***
AMBARA		SDANDI	WI	421
	20	ought fores	41.	6. d.
	of seigns Bro	ought forwa		00
120 negroes at 25		• •		Dabou
36 ditto at 201.	•		7,20	00
0 1 5/6			1 62	- 17 mil
0 0 002			. 4120	
4000 0 0	Ninth y	ear.	neos at 2	
. (. 5810 9 0	Expend			,
Taxes, -			10	00
Buildings,	educe	19	50	00
House-keeping,			100	9.9
Implements,		-	40	0 4
Labour, -	•		200	00
Incidents,		t 25l.	6 201931	0 6
Interest, -		'	273	ID O
Freight, -	•		180	00
60 negroes at sol.	5k. 15 . •	•	3000	00
216 ditto at 21. 138	oth year.	Flore	572	80
	and acres	VALLE		s in the second
	- NAME OF THE PARTY OF THE PART	*	. 4478	90
	Produc			
0 0 01 -	Froduc	c	· .a:	Такс
Wheated	•		goo	
Gattle, -		-3	100	
156 negroes at 251		•	3900	
60 ditto at 201.	•	•	1200	
0.00			2700	nion!
0 11 5/2 -		£	. 5500	0.0
0 0 002	T1	105 %	negrous	OLY
0 81 2701	Tenth y	ear.	e uz onib	
	Expence	·s.		·
o or reor of ne	Trock the			
Taxes,	Was Store		10	00
Buildings, -	eddace.	4	60	00
House-keeping, Implements,	2000年 (東京日本) 1000年 (日本)		150	00
imbiements,			00	0 VB

e o ook travo bait De 3

0 %			
9 3 404	Brought 12	1.	s. d.
D C CCS DIGW	Brought	forward, 300	100
Labour, -	•	- 16200	00
Incidents,	* *	- 53	
Interest,	•	- 273	
Freight,		- 200	
So negroes at 50l	Lwelfih y ar	4000	
296 ditto at 21. 1	38. TEST MARKET	- 784	
	Copelier.	£. 5810	90
00 0A			6525-7
00003 -	Produce.	.290	Buildi
Wheat -	27-12-800x	्र चंप् 3 00	Stoute
Cattle, -		- 90	ologna
216 negroes at 2	d.	- 5490	d-wo
So ditto at 201.		- 1660	prosp
计量数据 法从的证券 医心丛		- 11	March.
- 180 00 of		£. 7400	9 0 Q
9000 CROS -		1 37 20132	10.1
- \$42.5 BOO	Eleventh year	eril is renom	modely.
क्रिक्षक व्यवका	— ,)		
Anthrope College (C)	Expences.		1
Taxes, -	-Produce	- 10	00
Buildings,			00
House-keeping,			nielo
Implements,			oconi
Labour,	State of the state of	\$ 2 36 830 200	
Incidents,		בשנט מו פבו	
Intereft,	•		10
Freight,		- 200	
TIO negroes at 50	Tends year, de	- 5500	00
1406 dino at 130].	bevine anived	1 200 1075	18 0
on any planta-	dit with	10 00 16 464x	
	** ****	3211 20 1386	HERE!
		Hors Caron	10118
will be proper	11 Produce.	ows, no bo	fou
Wheat, -	194.		00
Cattle, -	•	- 100	SOLUME COMPANIES FOR
0 0 000 avoi	Carrie	jed over, 400	00
		10H 6.0. 2	

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. Brought forward, 400 296 negroes at 251. 110 ditto at 20l. succeeding eat. is it is also a £. 10,000 Twelfth year. Expences. Taxes, Buildings, House-keeping, Implements, Labour, 200 Incidents, 33 Interest, Freight 200 150 negroes at 50l. 7500 556 ditto at 21. 138. 1473 9999 Produce.

Wheat,
Cattle,
406 negroes at 25l.
150 ditto at 20l.

10,150 0 0

1,50 ditto at 20l.

10,150 0 0

10,150 0 0

10,150 0 0

And now having arrived at the greatest number of negroes met with on any plantation in Carolina, (above 500, which are found on two or three) it will be proper

Wheat, 4 9 H

444 AMBRICAN HULBANDRY. A
so close the account with the next year,
by supposing no new ones bought
O O OOLS
Thirteenth year. a looo, 21
[1] - 10 - 10 - 10 - 10 - 10 - 10 - 10 -
and to some and Experices.
Taxes,
House-keeping, salar - vana - var tud 150 0 0
Implements, in a vi iflore i entre onber 8000 de
Dage the what we fee here to of this wind
Freight, or held digit and show of vizzgeon's
550 negroes at 21. 138, d1 18 113000 1473 8 6
charlest annually by tayings out of the pre-
Pengostes products - but if inflered one
rows money to increase his stock of diagram
one poet at the end of the term will the
Cartle, liw curst and of the series 1000 0 0
diago, is entirely owing to an accumulation of the plantes rears, the plantes rears, the plantes rears.
and and a reave don't no loot store and
Houlekeeping, merel different grings of the
mtereff and allord sid rot mut regral 273114 de
Total rentificad of waiting the fightings forth
Seath and in order afterwards to live
This profit is immenie, and yet upon
revision there do not frem any articles that
we we denis time tayerns and concerts of
(Maries Town more than his prantation, any

asm

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. are calculated too low. I am featible that there are not any planters in South Carolina that lay up, or make an income of 12,000l. a year; but calculations of what may be done can take no cognizance of private conduct. There are fome planters in this province who have more than seo flaves; but very many causes amay cont fpire to reduce their profit to a trifle, combared with what we fee here : of 556 ne groes only 40 were here supposed to be originally bought; all the reft were purchased annually by faving out of the preceding years products pibut if inflead of this the planter fpends his income, and borrows money to increase his stock of flaves the profit at the end of the term will turn out very differently. The great profit here stated, is entirely owing to an accumulation of profits for twelve years, the planter live ing upon rool: or i sold a year pour the event would prove very different in he takes at first a larger fum for his house-keeping and if, inflead of waiting the fight welver years patiently, in order afterwards to live more at his eafe, and in almost any degree of affluence he pleases; if, inflead of this he frequents the taverne and concerts of Charles Town more than his plantation, any

man

for calculation turning out differently from real life. The only means of coming at nieful truth in such cases as this, is to calculate what may be done, what such a business, under given circumstances, can produce as to the caprices of individuals, they are beyond the power of calculation; but the profit here supposed will admit of great deductions in several articles which seem the lowest set in expense, and yet the remainder will turn out so considerable, as to prove that planting in this country may be made the way to immense fortunes.

continue we have no agriculture in England, where larger fortunes are made by it than in any other country, that will pay any thing like this owing to feveral circumstances which deferve attention. First, land is so plentiful in America, that the purchase of a very large estate costs but a stiffe and all the angual taxes paid afterwards for ten thousand acres, do not a mount to what the window duty in England comes to make the window duty in E

plenty of land, which is at the fame time for excellent, enables the planter to proport from his culture every year, to the faving of the preceding, which is the grand or cum stance in the increase of his fortune : linee it is this which converts simple interest at per cent. with an English farmer, to compound interest at 100 per cents with an American planter. Were the wafte lands of Britain in the fame fituation as thole of America, to be granted to what ever would lettle and engage to entitione them. this would be the case with them? but the profit from the inferiority of the land, and the dearness of labour, would not equal that above flated. TAs thefe wants are private property, and cannot be gained by other people, there is no companion lemains between them? and as to common agriculture, the profit of 20 or 30 percent. Without ally abiney of increasing the bund neis anhunty; It Cannot be Hanted with this of America. si Secondly, the price of the Bour is theompalably cheapels in Carolina than in Britathes a negro oofts 2104 36 per annum, vid which if we had 191 egoone Threself of his prime costs the comins only 31. 3s. and las the continue calculation us, fat one English labourer does as much work VIII

work as two negroes, a labourer to the planter cofts rol. 6s, a year, whereas to an English farmer he costs from from 201. co 2gli The difference is 124 per cent. this article therefore is very decifive in favour of the plantery Thirdly, we are to remember the peculiar girbumstance of the prices of the plenter's products and confumptions : his crops, whether of indigo, hobacco, &co. are of a confeant high value, the price rifing; as it has done indeed for thefe fifty years bus his confurantion of corn, meat, frait fowler game, fifth, &c. being chiefly the produce of his own plantation, Rand him in little or nothing for his family. The common idea of the article game and fin is, that one Indian, or dextrous negro. will with his gun and nets, get as much came and fifth as five families can eat I and the flaves support themselves in provisions, belides raining the flaples mentioned an boyers but in Britain the fervants kept in the house cost the farmers Tzl. or Tgl. as head in board, befides his own houfed keeping being in the fame articles as those he fells from his farm : fo that he cannot in his fale have the advantage of high prices, without being proportionally taxed in his confumption. This point in al large family anow.

mily is of great importance, and would, if calculated for a course of years, be sound to amount to a very considerable sum. Bestides this great superiority in respect of prosit, the pleasing circumstance of being a considerable freeholder, and living in a most plentiful, and even luxurious manner, is a point that has nothing among British farmers for apposition to it.

These three grand articles, plenty of good land free from taxes—cheapness of labour—and dearness of product sold, with cheapness of that consumed, are, united, suffiscient to explain the causes of a Carolina planter having such vastly superior opportunities of making a fortune than a British farmer can possibly enjoy.

Considered in a national light, no had consequences can result from making known the great profit which may be made by planting in Carolina; for all the inhabitants of this province are well employed for Britain, and husbandry is too profitable an employment for them to suffer any one to think of manufactures; all their cloathering, furniture, tools, and a variety of other articles, come from Britain, besides the example to and supportation employing many ships and scamen for the mother-country. Nor

430 AMERICAN HUSEANDEX.

Nor are we ever to forget the great importance of taking every measure so hinduce now fettlers in our colonies, emigrants from Europe, to fix in those settlements, which from climate, soil, and staples, are of such importance to Britain, as the West Indies, Carolina, and the tobacco colonies are found to be, to all the reparence reduced to be the settlements.

If the state of Europe at present be confidered, which is that of a military state, from one end to the other, infomuch that in fome parts of this quarter of the world the military out-number the rest of the men; if this be confidered, furely all mankind must think, with peculiar pleasure, of a country which holds forth an alylum to protect them from the cruelties of the military government, and the horrible oppressions of the despotic sway in all other matters: thefe are such curses on human nature, that it is aftonishing any men of small fortunes, or to the amount of from one to five or fix thousand, pounds, should remain in such countries, that deny them most of the comforts, enjoyments and fecurity of life. On the contrary, these southern colonies of the British dominions in America hold forth the very contrast to the unhappiness they experience in Europe They may have whatcoergou

whatever land they pleafe, at a price next to nothing; that land as rich; if cholen With Judgment, as in any country in the World's in a climate that produces the Tichest commodities, and at the fame time abounds with all the necessaries of life, in a plenty not to be equalled throughout any other countries on the globe ? and at the fame time that both foil and climate, and plenry of land, foin to yield fuch advantageous offers ! the government is the most mild in being; liberty reigns in perfection taxes are too inconfiderable to be mentioned; no military fervice; no opprefficient to enflave the planter, wand rob all thele great and manifelt advantages are confidered, I think it must appear furprifing,"that more emigrants from different parts of Europe are not tonflantly moving From thence to America: nothing But that Tove for the native country, "omverfal thro' mankind, could prevent whole crowds of people from flying from milery and oppresfion, to wealth and freedolmyon on the

The calculation here inferted is that only of a confiderable plantation; but it is a clicumitance peculiarly fortunate, in the hulbandry of those parts of America where

negroes

negroes are used, that a small, and even the fmallest plantation is proportionally as profitable as the largest. There is no necesfity of employing an overfeer for the negroes; if the number is small, the planter himself takes that office on him. Men establith even such small plantations, as employ only two or three negroes, and make by them a fum proportioned to what their more confiderable neighbour enjoys from as many hundreds: indigo is of that nature in the culture, that even a fingle negro may be employed on it; fince the apparatus for it does not even, for three or four flaves, cost above ten or a dozen pounds. Husbandry in England on so small a scale is carried on with scarce any advantage; for no profit, public or private, accrues from the smallest scale of farms; since our best writers on the subject of husbandry agrees that the occupiers of such farms live much harder and fare worse than our day-labourers. But nothing can be more different than this from Carolina, where the little planter, whose freehold amounts only to one or two hundred acres, with his two or three negroes, makes not only a most comfortable living for himfelf, but also such an annual profit, that if he is at all faving and evoryea

and diligent, he may speedily increase his negroes and his plantation, and in no long term of years become a man of handsome fortuneds not restravourse guardiques to wast

And here let me once more observe, that the calculations which have been given are particularly deduced from the circumflances of the back country, and not from the culture of rice in the destructive and unwholesome swamps on the coast; so that this large degree of profit is to be gained in a country whose climate is equal to the foil, being healthy and pleafant to as great a degree as any country in a hot climate that is to be found in the world; and to the generality of constitutions, taking the world through, perhaps more wholesome than many parts of Europe. Was fuch a profit only to be made by cultivating rice fwamps, I should be far enough from dwelling upon the advantages of it; but as they flow not from rice, but indigo, tobacco, corn, hemp, flax, &c. which admit of culture better in the back country than on the coast, all the benefits I have dwelt on are reaped without any fach attendant inconveniencies as are met with in the riced. plantations to a circumstance of infinite importance to the mother-country as well as to the colony.

CHAP. XXIII.

Exports of South Carolina at different periods—Rapid progress of the trade of this province—Present state—Remarks.

HE great increase of the population of the northern colonies is not near of fuch advantage to Great Britain as that of the fouthern ones, which in proportion to the increase of population has a correfponding increase in the production of true flaple commodities, the circumstance on which the interest of Britain depends; those colonies which have not staples, we have found from long experience, can afford to purchase but a small part of their manufactures and other necessaries from the mother-country; common agriculture will not effect it; accordingly we see, that in the northern fettlements, that is, the fettlements to the north of Maryland, they are forced to make up their deficiency of staples by fisheries and commerce, in both of which HOTTAING articles

articles they interfere confiderably with Britain; so that their import of manufactures is by no means of the value of that of the fouthern fettlements, as they get the money to make their purchases, by rivalling the fisheries and commerce of Britain. Hence therefore appears the constant expediency of watching anxiously the increase of population in the southern parts of America, and taking every measure to increase it. Nor can any conduct in the administration of our government be of fuch great importance, as inducing the people fettled in the northern colonies to quit them in favour of the fouthern ones. The truth and propriety of these sentiments will appear from the following tables of the exports of South Carolina.

Quantity. Rates. Rates. Amount Sterling. 55,000 bufhels 0 1 5 per 100 lb. - £, 88,600 39,308 bufhels 0 1 5 per bufhel - 2,789 15 cafks 0 14 3 per cafk - 2,789 296,000 in number 0 17 1 per roof - 2,789 6,107 bufflels 0 1 5 bufflel - 2,33 700 bufflels 0 1 3 cafk - 4,32 10 cafks 0 0 4 4 200 roffes 0 0 4 4 158 0 1 6 6 1764 barrels 0 0 0 0 0 2200 lb. 0 0 0 0 0 0 2200 lb. 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 2200 lb. 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0 0	Exports from Charles Town from Nov. 1747, to Nov. 1748.
o 6 5 per 100 lb. o 14 3 per calk o 17 1 per roco o 18 5 bulhel o 14 3 calk o 14 3 calk o 14 3 rope r 11 5 bullock o 18 6 barrel o 18 6 barrel o 18 6 barrel o 10 5 barrel	Quantity.
o 1 5 per bufhel o 14 3 per cafk o 17 1 per 1000 o 1 8 bufhel o 14 3 cafk o 0 4 rope r 11 5 buflock o 8 6 barrel o 18 6 barrel o 0 4 1b. r 20 cafk o 6 5 barrel	55,000 bushels
o 14 3 per calk o 17 1 per 1000 o 1 5 bulhel o 14 3 calk o 0 4 rope r 11 5 bullock o 8 6 barrel 1 8 6 barrel 1 2 10 calk o 6 5 barrel	39,308 bulhe
0 17 1 per 1000 0 1 5 bufhel 0 0 8 bufhel 0 0 4 rope 1 11 5 buflock 0 8 6 barrel 1 8 6 barrel 1 2 10 cafk 1 2 10 cafk 0 6 5 barrel	15 calks
o r s bufhel o o 8 bufhel o o 4 rope r r r s bullock o 8 6 barrel r 8 6 barrel o 0 4 lb. r 2 10 cafk o 6 5 barrel	296,000 in nu
o o 8 buffel o 14 3 cafk o o 4 rope o 8 6 hog o 18 6 barrel o 0 4 lb. I 2 10 cafk o 6 5 barrel	6,107 bufhe
o 14 3 cafk o 0 4 rope r 1 1 5 bullock o 8 6 hog o 18 6 barrel r 8 6 barrel o 0 4 lb. r 2 10 cafk o 6 5 barrel	- 700 bushe
1 11 5 bullock 0 8 6 barrel 1 8 6 barrel 0 0 4 1b. 1 2 10 calk	ro calks,
o 8 6 hog	200 ropes
o 8 6 hog	•
o 8 6 hog	- 28
o 18 6 barrel 1 0 0 0 4 1b 1 1 2 10 calk - 0 6 5 barrel	- 158
1 8 6 barrel	1764 barrel
0 0 4 lb. 1 2 10 cafk -	- 3114 barre
1 2 10 calk	- 2200 lb.
o 6 5 barrel	130 calks
	5521 barrels

	1	4	M	E	R	C	A	N	н	U	s E	A	N	D	R	Y.		437
969			100	19	,	.∞	5		6,764	-∞	13	15	25	67		349	70	159611
									-									H
		•																4
			•		•													Carried over, L.
														,				A
						•											1	2
		•		•														Ë
												•						3
									•								•	
	•	•		•												t's		
. 23												_				S	1 per 100	
										Te	jar	F	bag	-		8	0	
_	0	0	0	-	-	-			16.	ba	ja	P	Pa	5		5	3	
Ĕ,	=	E	Ē	acl	act	each	Jair		5							per	ber	
0	9	P -	0 1		9 1	E	10		6 per Ib.	-	9	0	10	0		3	H	
•				10		Ī	Ť							7		+		
5	1	7	7	4	17	00	4	-	~	17	∞	"	7		763	-	17	
0	0	0	0	4	0	-	0		·	4	+	d	63	4		'n	9	
2784 barreis	291 ditto	2397 ditto	97 ditto	. 9 in number	8 in number	6 in number	- So pair		134,118 lb.	3 barrels	9 jars	7 barrels	7 bags	22 tons		61,148 feet	8,189 ditto	
											5	~						
	•																	
							•	6										
6								2 .			-							
Tar Common	-a. \Green,	Turpentine,	Rolin,	Mafts, -	Bowfprits,	Booms,	Oars,	Vegetable produce of	Indigo,	Pot ashes,	Oil of turnenti	Oil of temporary	Cotton wool,	Saffafras,	Lumber.	Boards,	Cedar boards,	

Lumber.	Quantities.		Rates.		Amount Sterling
•				Brought over,	t over, £. 119,63
edar plank, -	1,331 feet		5 a foot	•	6
- pofts	52 ditto			•	•
yprefs boards,	-21,000 ditto	9,0775	3	•	
Ditto.	979 boards			•	
Heading, City	13,975 ditto	138.76	3	•	
itto	127,652 feet			•	- 54
litto pine, '-	148,143 ditto		m	•	- 84
Ditto,	1,293 boards		0	•	5
Ditto plank,	22 in number		-		•
aywood plank	- 98 ditto			•	, ,
cantling,	2,000 feet		o per 1000	•	•
hingles, -	635,170 in number			•	96 - 3
taves,	132,567 ditto		8 ditto	•	- 567
imber,	4,000 feet		3	•	
itto,	9 pieces		8 each	•	1
Valnut	739 feet	1 14	3 per 100	•	•
Ditto.	66 pieces		10 each	•	•
Hogheads,	So in number		6 ditto	•	
ierces, .	- 43 ditto	0 7	1 ditto	•	•
9000					

(Beaver	- 200 lb.	•	3 per lb.	•	42
Skins, Calf, -	- 141 in number	.0	00		0768
Deer,	- 720 hhds.	20			- 36,000
	- 8r barrels	. I	6 per barrel		(115
lord .	5 25 jars		T per	•	- 1:0 20
- dulus	1 26 cafks		0		. 3. 5.
elk, -	8 boxes		0.5	•	- 229
S Bees,	rooo lb.		8 00 lb.	•	3
Myrtle,	- 700 lb.		&	•	- 2
nufactures.	C S C DATE 13	ó	2 bet partel		TACK.
Leather tanned	10,356 lb.	5 0	o lb.		. 2,589
	- 7 boxes	2	you 9	•	- 32.531
. Candles,	- 34 ditto	2 2	eac	•	V- 193 139
Bricks,	7000 in number	0 14	3 per 1000	•	The state of the state of

Amount Ster ling.	183,193	27,115	23,000	1,881	736	266	384	2,228	1,642	6482	0189	880	1	242,529
fmoun	· · ·	7		•		•	•			•	•		1	·;
7			•			•				•				
	•	•		•					•					•1
•						•	•			-		•		
	arrel	200		arrel	d.	Č.	pex	Alex.	uhe	Dill	000	,		•
	per	=	each	5 per barrel	ditto	ditto	ditto	ditto	per	ditto	5 per 1000	dirto	100C	ک
ales.	550	9 7	0 20	9	500	101	816	9 08	2.0	18 5	5	00		•
×	121	0	500	0	0	00	001	21	8	0 IS	0	4	5	
T.														•
H. C. L.	104,682 barrels 1 15 o per barrel	60,70	Hes.	arrels	irto	itto	itto	itto	uffiels	itto	number	itto	7	D 1
antiti	82 b	24 18	90 h	9 b	45 d	b 65	P. 91	P 99	28 b	P. 29	00 in	p 00		
200	04,6	6,91	4	5,00	2,9	7	4	155	16,4	9,1	114,0	560,0		
4		,					•				1,			1
	1								•			1		
		•	. 597	•				•	•	• 10			40.00	articles,
9	1		us,		100	me,	i.	uc,	corn,		-			there
Clere	.	100	CT-CK	ch,	(rz.	rpent	er.	4	Indian c	afe,	Shingles,	thes,		Total of the
	Z.	Ĕ	ă	H	-	2	Be	Po	In	B	Sh	St		P.

These articles not containing the whole export, the total does not shew the full increase; but rice and indigo being the two grand staples of the province, their increase shews how quick the cultivation of South Carolina had advanced in those years.

Exported in ten months, 1761, from Charles Town.

lice, itch, 6,376 ditto 6,376 ditto 7 i ditto 8 ditto 8 ditto 8 ditto 9 ditto 9 ditto 9 ditto 9 ditto 9 ditto 1 ditt		Quantities.	Rates.		Amount Sterling
6,376 ditto 931 ditto 9,31 ditto 4,808 ditto 7 1 ditto 161,000 in number 17,149 ditto 1,13 0 per barrel 399,366 lb. 9, 2 6 per lb. 422 hhds. 6, 37 0 o cach		roo,000 barrels	1 15 o p	er barrel	£. 175,00
4,808 ditto 0 5 0 ditto 4,808 ditto 0 7 1 ditto 161,000 in number 0 17 1 per 1000 14,149 ditto 1,13 0 per barrel 399366 lb. 0 2 6 per lb. 422 hhds. 50 0 0 cach	•	6,376 ditto	o 6 5 d	itto	- 2,04
4,808 ditto 0 7 1 ditto 161,000 in number 0 17 1 per 1000 144 barrels 154 ditto 1 13 0 per barrel 399366 lb. 6 2 6 per lb. 422 hhds. 65	pend oupe, minter	- 931 ditto	0 5 od	tto •	- 23
161,000 in number 0 17 1 per 1000 144 barrels 15,146 ditto 1 13 0 per barrel 399,366 lb. 6 2 6 per lb. 422 hhds. 69 0 0 cach	ine,	4,808 ditto	p 1 6 0	itto	0/21
14. barrels 1.13 o per barrel 1.3	•	161,000 in number	0 17 I P	er 1000	- I3
		141 barrels	3 34 3	1266	2
3993266 lb. 0 2 6 per lb. 422 hhds. 50 0 0 cach	beef,	- 1,149 dato	113 op	er barrel -	6811
- 399,360 lb. 0 2 0 per lb. 422, hhds. 50 0 0 each		- 3. parrels	0	000	CO.
		399/36b b.	0 2 0 P	er lb.	- 49.92
out a coop of the state of the coop of the	Die Contraction of the Contracti	422 phds.	000	6.3	21,10
	pundles	Septo page		attenger at	LMStq Y. 525 030

236,8	6,721 lb. 236,850 in number 466,186 fect	6 0 8 lb.	1b. 1000	224 1,014 - 2,657
	oo in number	1 14 3 0 13 1.46	. 0001	£. 256,767
Befides many other articles.	0.10 C	0.00		祖
	Carlotte Control	2 11.2 o St. 4.	· issued a	

their identials thems how discipling the two Risad Hables of the broxines. sits and ton asob lates out the expert, the total does not there the no trote Acster

This incomplete table shews another considerable increase of export, and the following will continue the progression.

Exported from South Carolina upon an average of three years succeeding the peace of 1762.

teas acomposito de la compacto del compacto de la compacto del compacto de la compacto del la compacto de la compacto del la compacto de la c	1.	s. d.
Rice 110,002 barrels at 408	220,000	00
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 8000 bar- rels, at 6s. 8d.	2,666	13 4
Pickled pork and beef,	25,000	00
Deer and other skins,	45,000	00
Indigo 500,000 lb. at 2s	50,000	
Boards, masts, staves, joists, &c.	20,000	00
Indian corn, peafe, beans, and calavanche	8, 12,000	00
Live stock and fundries,	15,000	00
Ships built for fale, 10 at 600l.	6,000	00
	The second secon	THE RESERVE OF THE PERSON NAMED IN

Total, £. 395,666 13 4

And fince this account I have been favoured with another for the year 1771, which is as follows:

ehit di baare is da tens, l'escrete.	1.	s, d.
	490,000	. 0 0
Pitch, tar, and turpentine, 10,000 bar- rels, at 10s.	5,000	00
Pork and beef,	30,000	00
Corn and other provisions,	13,500	-00
Deer-tkins, &c.	50,000	00
Lumber,	32,000	00
Live flock,	17,000	00
Ten ships,	6,000	00
	112,500	

Total,

This

£. 756,000 0 0

This acount shews in how extraordinary a manner the improvement of South Carolina has been carried on; and it has been a peculiar felicity to this province, that the prices of its staples have rifen considerably at the same time that the quantity raised has increased immensely. This circumflance, which is of fuch uncommon va-Iue. has advanced the interests of the country prodigiously, and now renders it one of the most flourishing colonies we posses in America; at the same time that the quantity of land which yet remains to be cultivated, is beyond comparison greater than what is yet improved. It is also to be remembered, that the parts unsettled being more rich, fertile, and healthy, than the coast which yields the commodities hitherto exported, and is in particular far more luxuriant in the production of indigo: now it is to be observed, that the grand staple of this province, rice, has not fo good a probability of future increase as indigo; the latter is fo valuable a ldrug, and produced in fo few countries, that Carolina may look forwards to almost any quantity, even till the whole confumption of Europe, America, and parts of Africa and Afia, are fatisfied, before a stop will be put to her mar-

ket

ket for this commodity; for there is little doubt of her being able to underfell both French and Spaniards. But with rice, the case may be different; for being an article of food, it is rivalled by other articles: good harvests of wheat in Europe and Africa would sink the price; for it has risen from 15s. and 20s. a barrel to 3l. 10s. and 4l. from the high price of wheat in Europe; if grain should fall much, the price of rice must fall with it: indeed it is at present so dear, that the rate may fall greatly, and yet leave the planter sufficient inducement to increase the culture of it.

The exports of this province will not be many years in rifing to a million sterling; it will gain this point of equality with Virginia and Maryland put together, before it has a fifth of the inhabitants found in those provinces, which shews how valuable the climate is to produce so largely in exportable staples. I do not compare the staples, for certainly tobacco is far more valuable to Britain than rice, and perhaps than indigo; but tobacco is produced in the back part of South Carolina, and of a quality superior to that of Virginia; the quantity however is but small yet: a navigation for large canoes that will carry from five to

ten ton, is wanting, when you get far back, which navigation in the culture of tobacco is very necessary.

CHAP. XXIV.

mode a larger profit than the need gance

Improvements proposed in the culture of this province.

HOWEVER wealthy the production of staples may make a country, it is common husbandry alone on which first depends the interest of any people; and it ever behoves them much to carry this to as high a degree as possible. All our American colonists are very bad farmers; this is a remark I have had occasion to make when treating of every one of them: it is almost uniformly owing to the great plenty of land, which enables every body to gain the necessaries of life with so much ease, that an accurate and industrious cultivation appears useless.

The productions of common husbandry in Carolina, by which I mean corn and provisions of all forts, have risen of late years to so high a price, that I have been assured by several considerable planters and

merchants in this province, that the farmers who have employed their negroes on these objects alone have in several years made a larger profit than has been gained from rice and indigo; and that on an average, there has been an equality. This is a circumstance of prodigious consequence, since the common husbandry is exercised in the healthy and agreeable back country, while rice only is to be had in the swamps in the flat, maritime, and unhealthy part.

The articles cultivated are wheat (which grain will not thrive in the flat country) Indian corn, Indian peafe, barley, buck-wheat, tatoes, and other roots, fruit, &c. hilly part of the province is wonderfully fertile in these products, yielding, in very bad modes of culture, crops equal to what good husbandry will produce on many tracts of land in Britain. But this excellence of foil and climate is very badly feconded by the skill of the farmer. Indian corn is the principal grain they raife, which is managed in the manner I have described before; they are very defective in the article of keeping the plantations of it clean from weeds; the culture the intervals receive is only that of an infufficient handhoeing or two; but, instead of this, the horfe-

horse-hoeing husbandry should be applied: the spaces between the rows should both ways be horfe-hoed, for the double purpose of keeping them free from weeds, and in a loofe pulverized flate; and likewife for earthing up the plants, which might be performed with a plough much more effectually than with hand-hoes, and for a tenth of the expence: the latter never cut deep enough, only ikimming the furface, whereas horse-hoeings and hoe-ploughs loosen it to any depth, giving the roots of the plants the power of penetrating into fresh earth, inflead of confining them to their hillocks. This fingle improvement in the management of Indian corn would vafily increase the profit of that culture.

It is the custom in all the southern colonies to sow Indian pease with Indian corn, for the sake of their twining up the stalks of the latter; this renders the culture the more beneficial, as the product of pease is as valuable, and sometimes more so, than that of the corn itself. I would by no means condemn a custom which has an appearance of reason for it; but as such practices in most other branches of husbandry are found very disadvantageous, it is at least worth some accurate experiments to decide whether as much is not loft in the Indian corn as is gained in the peafe by this method; which may possibly be the case, the product of fuch large and vigorous plants as Maize, usually is proportioned to the nous tichment the roots meet with and cert tainly the peafe cannot grow out of the faine hillock without fobbing them of much nourishment. A good hop-planter would think it very bad management to fet a cabbage on a pearing hop-hillock , bad ones plant the intervals, but good hop farmers detline even this practice; innot because crops to gained would not be valuable, but because more would be lost in hops that pained in the other plantsmile out to read

As to the preparation of the land for maize, wheat, barley, &cc. it is nearly firmilar; they take a piece of fresh land, and plant it perhaps with indigo, which it yields as long as any heart remains sufficient in the soil for that exhausting crops then they plant it with wheat or Indian come and afterwards with barley; and when it will yield nothing any longer, they leave it to itself, and treat other pieces in succession in the same manner. This is the system of all the provinces from New England to Florida; and it is a system

from which they will all by-and-bye feel the most monstrous inconvenience. When indigo is not planted, the first crop is Indian corn, which they follow by a second and perhaps a third of the same grain; then wheat or barley as long as the land will allow.

To this miferable husbandry it is owing, that the province wants pasture, which is only to be found in the woods or in drained rice swamps; though the planters all know the importance of cattle to them, they never think of fowing any graffes, but exhauft and ruin the land by corn, &c. and leave it, not a pasture, but a defart : the heat of the climate is fo great that there is a want of good meadow in fummer, and this makes the woods the natural pafture of the country in its unimproved flate. But this evil might be remedied by sowing graffes, provided the land was laid so them while it was in some heart. The grass, when properly conducted, would be as profitable as the corn, and it might be gained without any decrease in the quantity of corn, in a country where land is so plentiful: this observation is particularly applicable to Carolina, where the land is cleared with fo much case; a given quan-

tity of acres in this province is cleared of all the timber with infinitely more ease than one tenth of the land would be in Europe, with the advantage also of the timber paying the expence; and if oak or pine, more than the expence.

Suppose a planter has negroes sufficient to have every year 500 acres of corn, 250 acres Indian corn, 150 wheat, 100 barley, buckwheat, &c. If his system of crops is

- and of Indian corn, will as the many bear ye
- books. Dittol and a state though seems took
- Part of Ditto and Barn I de simole throught
- whow. Wheat is bush no ancional hundre
- said g. Wheat: 100 of white, a someth chief
- site 6. Barley. 4 Chan ill mondy assessment
- LO all 7: Barley! Obsairs would as house the

He then is able to support the system, by taking in a seventh of the 500 acres for fresh land every year, that is, 71 acres; and he has always 500 acres in culture, with no other profit from the rest of his estate than what the woods yield him; he leaves 71 acres barren and useless every year, which will soon run through a large grant; for some years the land is absolutely nought; then shrubs come, and by degrees forest wood rises, and it is an age before it can be greatered.

yield any profit. Now on the contrary, let us suppose his system

. Indian corn. ball la la ana managar

-in 2. Ditto. offe sestanvils salt day regot

3. Potatoes, peafe, beans, legumes,&c.

mora than the expende.

4. Wheat.

Barley, and with it clovers, fainfoine, or lucerne. In this lystem he much take in 100 acres every year, and he every year lays down 100 acres to grass. The fecond year of pursuing such a plan he has 200 acres grafs; the third year 200; the fourth year 400; and so on. By which means his whole estate will be in a profitable condition, and he will every year have a greater plenty of food for his cattle; the consequence of which will be his stocks of cattle will be larger, and better fed; he will raise much greater quantities of mapure, and two acres of his corn must inevitably produce more grain than three in the other fystem. ed moit there redto ou

on these principles be cultivated, the hear of the climate will make it necessary to have recourse to such plants as have a long tap root, because by rooting deep they will be more out of the power of the sun; sain-foine and lucerne I should suppose would

be

be found of fingular utility, especially the latter; both these plants have been brought into the colder parts of Europe from very hot countries. Lucerne is indigenous in Media and Alia Minor, and fainfoine in Calabria and Barbary: there can be no doubt therefore of their fucceeding admirably on the dry tracks of land in the back parts of Carolina, and also in all the fandy hilly parts of the province. The culture would be attended with none of those inconveniencies which have been found in England, from the moisture of the climate choaking the plantations with natural grass and weeds: the heat of climate would entirely prevent these evils upon land well prepared; nor can any doubt be made but the crops would be very confiderable upon the fertile black loams of the interior country, and yield fuch plenty of food, both green and in hay, as to enable the planters to increase their stocks of cattle prodigiously.

It is much to be doubted whether the clovers would fucceed in the maritime parts of the province; but no helitation can be made about it in the interior country; and in this I ground my opinion upon the cafe of wheat, which thrives admirably two

Gg3

hundred or two hundred and fifty miles from the coaft, but will come to nothing in the flat country: there can be no doubt but it would be the fame with clover. which has been found profitable in all countries where wheat is cultivated. It should be made the general preparation for wheat in every fystem, as it is equally (in this respect) adapted to all climates in which it will grow, and to almost every fort of land. In fuch climates as South Carolina there is likewise a circumstance in it, as a preparation for wheat, that much exceeds any other; a fallow or a tillage crop leaves the foil in so loose and hollow a state, that the roots of wheat, or any other fibrous-rooted plant, are too much exposed to the fun's rays; whereas, if it is fown in a clover lay, the particles of the soil are kept in a state of adhesion by the roots and fibres of the clover, which is an effect that in such a climate must be attended with excellent consequences. With a view to this, the clover husbandry, common in Britain of leaving it only one year upon the land, might not be so adviseable in Carolina; it might be better to let the clover be two, or perhaps three years old before it is ploughed for wheat, in order the

the more completely to bind the foil together, especially in sandy land. The crops of this grass would, like sainsoine or lucerne, prove of great use to the planter, either in green food, or mown for hay, and maintain him twenty times the stock that the same land would do if under woods to

In the fystem above proposed, as an improvement of that of the Carolina farmers, there are feveral corn crops in fuccession, under the supposition that they would not at once come into an entire change, but the true principles of good husbandry are the same in Carolina as every where else; fuccessive exhausting crops ought never to be found: between every two of that nature, one should intervene which is of a meliorating nature, or at least which does not exhauft. It has been found in all the countries where the clovers have been cultivated, that the land improves under them. The same observation has been made upon potatoes, carrots, and other roots. Turneps and cabbages yielding crops before they perfect their feed, have the same quality. The grand principle of modern hufbandry, is to use these plants as fallows, or preparations for exhausting crops: and the principle is equally good, whether the ex-Gg4 hausting

hausting crop be fugar, wheat, indigo, or barley. The only distinction to be made, is for the planter to chuse such of them as will pay best in his country: fortunately, all of them are food for cattle, and there is no part of the world in which cattle are not valuable, or in the cultivated parts of it, where good husbandry does not greatly depend on cattle. In South Carolina nothing pays better, and the near neighbourhood of the West Indies affords an excellent market for as much meat and live flock as can possibly be raised: but the importance of having plenty of cultivated food for cattle, increases every day in this province; in proportion as the country is cultivated, the forest which was spread over the whole of it decreases, and consequently will maintain the less; this is so much felt in some districts, that many planters, who formerly kept immense herds of cattle, can now have but very moderate ones: it therefore much behoves them to cultivate grass and winter food for cattle, as well as corn. Potatoes in this province yield as good a price, both for home confumption and the West Indies, as in many parts of Britain; for of late years they have fold

fold at 1s. and 1s. 3d. a bushel, consequently no crop can be more profitable.

Upon these principles, might not such a system as the following be rationally recommended to the farmers of South Carolina?

- 1. Indian corn.
 - 2. Potatoes. bastdon an avanta blockw
- . Indian corn. and or life of bloow
- 4. Peafe or beans.
- boy 5. Barley. Decreased over bas area
- 6. Clover, are sved blasse and it to
 - 7. Wheat. The bear added to suffig

In this system no two exhausting crops come together; pease or beans, and in general the plants which bear a leguminous flower, being of a different nature from corn in this respect. Or to suit particular purposes, variations might be made.

- 1. Indian corn.
- 2. Potatoes.
- 3. Barley. The same same to the both
- 4. Clover. on to handle dear needs a
- Wheat.
- 6. Turneps or cabbages.
- 7. Indian corn.
- 8. Peafe or beans.
- 9. Wheat. to have the same and the same
- and 10. Potatoes.

- A sing to Barley. A who are has I see switch
- 12. Clover and a stir and and and analythmous
- doug 301Wheatin sold emisquisolts as pole i
- -ve say Cabbages, &c. will all as whitely
- of the Wheat manufact of estimation

main. In such a system of crops, the land would always be rich and clean; the planter would be able to keep wast stocks of cattle; in sisteen years he would sell nine crops of corn and two of potatoes, and at the end of it he would have a much more fertile pasture than he found at the beginning.

Partial trials of new recommended practices may turn out very unfuccessful without proving any thing against them. Suppose a Carolina farmer, struck with the idea of clover, fainfoine, or lucerne, was to throw it in among the fecond or third crop of wheat or barley, which followed two or three of maize; in such a mode of conduct, chance perhaps might give him a poor crop, instead of none at all, which he would have reason to expect; he might neglect those graffes in future from such an experiment, but furely with very little reason; for such a conduct would be like expecting a great crop of rice on a mountain-top, or fields of pine apples in the **fnows** MILE

fnows of Lapland. For this reason, such recommended practices had better not be tried at all, than to be partially or incompletely tried; since conclusions, however absurd, are sure to be drawn from all experiments, and people will not be so ready to discriminate and enquire into the causes of a failure, as to look at the single point, such a thing was tried, AND IT FAILED. A comprehensive way of judging and talking, which saves the trouble of understanding and reslection.

Befides rectifying the very erroneous fyftems purfued in this province, it will be necessary to remark, that the farmers are not attentive even to making the most of the fpontaneous growths, of which the natural meadows, are a proof; in many plantations they have favannah land, which in the back parts of the province is very good meadow; but the planters let their cattle run over the whole in fummer, without ever thinking of mowing hay, notwithstanding the crops would often be confiderable, and notwithstanding their cattle are fometimes half flarved for want of it: it is not sufficient to say that a climate admits the cattle to be unhoused all winter; their being in the woods or pastures is of little

little consequence, if they can get nothing to eat: the best planters find the necessity of baiting their herds well every night when they come home from the woods in winter; for though the climate is at times amazingly hot, yet, as I have elsewhere shewn, the frosts in winter are severer than those of England.

This part of their ill conduct is owing in a good measure to another branch of it, which is their neglect of fences: it would not be true to say that they had none, but the fact is, that they are confined too much to the care of their rice, indigo, or other valuable crop, and are apt to attend to a field no longer than while it is so occupied; none of them would think (unless it were a few sensible, and at the same time wealthy men) that a meadow or pasture was worth fencing: this is through that neglect which arises from their great plenty of land.

It would be in vain to adopt an advantageous fystem of crops, if at the same time the planter was not attentive to have all his fences equally good; since in good husbandry, that field which is at present under a crop of small value, will in a sew years be occupied by one of the greatest; the necessity therefore of this attention

must

AMBRICAN HUSBANDRYA 461

must be striking. In the management tob common, one part of an estate is under corn, and all the rest is forest; but in the proposed improvement; every part once cultivated is always to be of value; cattle will be grazing in clover or lucerne in the midst of fields of Indian corn or wheat, and consequently all the sences under an equal necessity of being good.

In the culture of roots, &c. for the winter food of cattle, they are very deficient: Where there is a very great ability of keeping any stocks in summer, but a confined opportunity in winter, it is much ito be questioned whether those crops which may be used as winter food, will not pay better in such an application, than when fold a and this particularly with potatoes: there are many advantages in using such brops upon the plantation; freight and carriage are faved, which are articles of importance; but the great point is the ability which the planter reaps from it of keeping fo many more cattle, and raising so much the more dung, which they all agree is of the first confequence in making the most profit of their plantations: the effect we fee in every part of Britain is similar to this; for the good farmers make it a rule never to fell those

those articles of their produce which are food for cattle, unless they bear a very great price, being sensible that it answers better to consume them at home.

In the culture of indigo, the Carolina planters are not fo attentive as they might be : they err in their ideas of the foil which they chuse for it a because it will grow in a poor white pine barren, it has been very abfurdly thought that this is the proper foil for it: indigo requires, if great crops would be gained, a rich, black, deep mould, fuch as is no where to be found near the fea. or at least only in small narrow flips adjoining the fwamps, and even in them not comparable in fertility to large tracts in the interior country. Those planters who would with to cultivate this drug to great profit, should fix in the back parts of the province, where the land is not only plentiful, but excellent; here they would raise treble the products they are able to do apon the coast, and the dye of a finer colour. In the culture of the plant, they are also too inattentive; the hand-hooings given by the negroes are very insufficient, and not comparable to the use of feveral horse-hoes. which for other purposes are used in Engli land. Hand-hoes in all operations between the

the rows of any crop should give place to horse-work, which is deeper, more reguher, and in every respect more effective; at the same time that the expence of it does not near approach to that of hand-work.

There is another improvement which deserves mention here; it is the culture of that species of rice which succeeds on dry ground, and even on hills and mountains. This fort is known in several parts of the East Indies, and would, in the back country of South Carolina, be of use as a new dependence for the planters there fixed; and it would be much more advantageous to have this grain from a healthy country, than from the unwholesome swamps in the maritime part. It would be no difficult task to get some seed of it from India, and would at least be worth the trial.

The culture of vines has been attempted in the back part of South Carolina, and with fuccess; but the husbandry has not been prosecuted with that vigor and attention which so important an object well deferves. The moment any individuals showed a desire of undertaking this branches as soon as there was the least reason for thinking the plan feasible—their wishes ought to have been prevented—their wants

fup-

Supplied-and every difficulty that eroses smoothed with the minutest attention. Buf instead of such a conduct being pursued. specimens of excellent wine have been sent home, and tafted by Lords of Trade, with application for encouragement in the undertakings made, and all without success. Were our governors bribed by the owners of the vineyards of Champaigne and Burgundy, a more impolitic conduct could not have been pursued; had a due attention been paid to those ingenious and industrious foreigners who have fettled in these southern colonies, and entered upon the vineyard culture, by this time American wine would have been common in the London vaults : and the importance of this nation's buying her wines by the sale of her manufactures. is too obvious to need expatiating on. Such an undertaking as that, of planting vineyards in these provinces, should be taken in hand by government, at least in giving every affiftance that could reasonably be required by those undertakers, who seemed to be well acquainted with what they were about; but unfortunately, a very different conduct has been pursued. Knowledge in this branch of agriculture was some years ago much wanting; but that is

no

no longer the case, there are many settlers that have arrived within a few years in South Carolina, perfectly acquainted with the business, but whose mean circumstances have proved the only obstacles they have met with: it is such men to whom public assistance should be given, for the public is more interested in their success than even themselves.

This is an object which ought not to be left to itself; the import of wine into this kingdom carries out of it an immense balance in cash, which throws a dead weight into very considerable branches of our commerce. North America consumes large quantities of Madeira, which consumption will in part be varied to that of their own wines before they can be expected to be brought in any quantities into this kingdom: hence the necessity of acting with some vigour, if we expect to see any beneficial consequences of many years.

Silk is another object which should be attended to with great seriousness; the back parts of this province are full of mulberrytrees, and the climate is of that due temperature which is requisite for success in this culture: as fine silk has been brought from Carolina as ever came from China,

Vol. I. Hh info-

infomuch that at some of our mills it is pre-ferred to any we receive either from the East Indies or Italy. The common objection of a want of people. I have before thewn the continuous care in the continuous results and care a sew since a market of mere internal management in the care and care appropriate of as many charles and care country was employed about nothing elfe it is fo much a-head that may be made in a single perhaps a pound and a half or two featon, perhaps a pound and a half or two pounds; to that if a family confifts of twenty persons, they may make thirty or forty one, and neglecting one owner.

- nucl own to affiliate the made of madded of madded of madded of madded on the carolina, though there are track of the same of th equally fo; the population of the country therefore has perhaps lefs to do with it than in any other article of culture. The object wanting, is to induce the people to undertake it and sive them infructions how to feed the worms, and to manage the cocoons; but this is eafly learned, and might become general through the province if proper in measures were taken for it can incerton be entertained of the end which might be executed at an inconfider taken in the end of the able expense. It would be a very fine thing for this nation if all the inhabitants of our colonies, possessing a proper climate, were to make each, only a pound of faw dH

filk, it would be as valuable an acquillion ferred to any we receive either from the Martinico or a Guadalupe would proba-

bly cost thirty or forty millions stelling; but Not a matter of mere internal management would be far more valuable, and might be had for one quarter of as many thousands. in every instance that can be named, do-in every instance that can be named, do-mestic improvement is of more consequence, owing fled a bar baudd that military ac-

quilition; yet is mankind ever panting after vitot 10 trials have yet been made of madder in Carolina, though there are tracks of a rich, deep, black, and reddith loams in the back parts of the province which would back parts of the province which would in the province which would be stoned by produce great erops of it, and the climate would probably lunt it better than that of England; for at is not the madder of Zealand that is the most extra-ordinary; that of Turkey, Alia Wihor, and Cyprus is of a valley greater fixe and better quality without any culture at all; no doubt can therefore be entertained of the climate rapidle on the climate rapidle of the climate r madder is worth from 801. to 901, a con; in England the deduction of 61. or 61. 10s. for freight would be but a fmall proportion. Hh 2

An acre of good land, well chosen and pro-perly cultivated, would, in the climate of the back, part of South Carolina, yield from a ton to a ton and a half and one megroe would manage above an acre very well, and have the winter months to be employed on fences and lumber besides. there are no crops in America that would affiwer much better than this, fince it would be above 401. per flave per annum ud The value of the commodity would also make it peculiarly adapted to those tracts of countil try that had not a good water-carriage for bulky commodities; a small canoe, which would run up any little branches nofiathed rivers, would carry a ton of its which would be more valuable than a ton of many other commodities: for the same reason indigo and silk should be particularly and couraged in those districts where wateros carriage is indifferent or at some distance.

Hemp in this respect is not of the same importance, but for their lower grounds on a flrong clay foundation in these back parts, where the low grounds are far more fertile than in the maritime part of the province. hemp would be a very valuable article of culture, if hear a good navigation. Such tracks are numerous, and would, if well

n'A

culti-

AMERICAN HUSBANDRY. cultivated under hemp, lave us no flight proportion of those immense sums which we skinually pay to the Baltic for this commodity. Improvements in our colonies in this varticle ought every where to be man this variete ought to be and and only confidential of the confiden will not admit of this, because it is nice in soil, but all the spots suitable to it in all our ellonies, from Nova Scotia to Florida, hould be thus appropriated; no planter, utiless he was particularly fituated, need have hemp for his principal dependence; but all hould have some of it that had but a small field of right foil: America would then much more than supply all our demand and her own too; and as the colonies increated mucultivation, Europe would be a constant market for all they could produce. It is a foltunate circumstance, that hemp grows best in a foil that is not suitable to any of the other staples of America, so that it could not rival them: it delights in a most, low, rich loam, on a clay bottom, and never thrives to good advantage in a dry of light foil, however rich, but will not do in a Iwamp, unless very rich and perfectly drained. Indigo and tobacco require

the black dry loam, regardless of the strage than suider it, provided it be not wet; and rice can only be had in a swamp under water that be upon this account that hemp would not rival their present staples, in the soil it equives, which is a matter of consequence; which is a matter of consequence; the productions is not so plentiful as to the productions is not so plentiful as to that the matter of indifference how the planter diposes of it, especially in the manual planter diposes of it, especially in the manual stands.

the circumitations the land luitable to continue of the circumitations of lawing light of the circumitations is not to plentiful as to yell light of the matter of indifference how the all letture times; but this plentiful dipoles of it, elpecially in the manual india market before part of the province.

India market before amount of the province of the province.

India market before the province of plantices are all it is very plantices and it is very plantices. full of plantations, and it is very plantalight ere a purpose to estate and the plantal guidelight for them lumber can be no dependent flowing that in nashiful flowing of leveral creps shifting that the profit they carrying, and selling others. ing, clearing, carrying and lelling for age to building tence; manufill adopted the solution of the solution. people is employed about many objects, people is employed about many objects, they have the beneficial chance, that it one would be be the beneficial chance, that if one would be the beneficial chance, that if one would be the beneficial chance, that if one fails others will succeed, and thereby presented the succeed. vent any great evils following: it is allo of collegistics, that the labour attending the products of a plantation be so divided, that the labour attending the products of a plantation be so divided, that as many bands be employed at one leason applicant.

as at another; for if the flaves are only employed in summer, or only in spring and autumn, the planter cannot make such profit by his bulinels as if they were employed regularly the year through. The planters of Carolina and our other colonies have not yet felt the necessity of this doctrine, from the circumstance of fawing lumber, for the West Indies finding them employment at all lessure times; but this branch of their but finels is confined to the amount of the West India market; belides there are numerous tracts of country in which the timber has tracts of country in which the timber has orginal to a rull a and a military has been long ago destroyed, but which are to gain up and it is very plain that full of plantations, and it is very plain that winter lowing of leveral crops, thresh, with the produce are no dependence in them lumber can be no dependence in the low of the low of the produce that the produce that the produce that the produce that the produce the produce the produce the produce the produce of the produce the produce of the produce the produce of the produce the produ of agriculture thould not depend on ope or and other graphing fences, manufactured and other work productions; tince in that cale a failure work a bluodication of a fail contequence, or a failing works, should keep all the liaves of a harding control of the station in regular employment through the station in regular employment through the fation in regular employment through the station in regular employment through the station of the property of a station of the principle of the station of the s madder,

madder, hemp, &c. In such a disposition of the lands and business of a plantation, the planter would find much greater profit than what he now makes by the assistance of two or three months of the slaves at lumber. And this is reason sufficient were others wanting, which however is far enough from being the case, for inducing the Carolina planters to divide their attention more in imitation of the best husbandmen in Europe.

end of the first, volume.

nal attendance on the with hadring fills, voolt had up that reason. The furnings colours and cleaning which most plants are vive, with the last of harding at always, full training the last of the plants for always and the colour hadrons of furnings and mark now there of

maddek

Winter Lowing of Leveral Crown, threit-

trades of connecty in which the ciphar idea been long ago defire and but which are full of plantators, and it is very plain that in them furnber in a cool a codence.



